

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 1-5

Chapter 1

On the Southwest border, war between the Nine Provinces calmed down. The fortresses were secured. Each of the impenetrable fortresses instilled fear into the enemies! At that moment, within one of the big buildings, a ruler observed a young man. A scowl creased his face.

“Are you really planning to return to the Eastfield? You’d like to keep this position of Supreme Warrior a secret for now?”

As the ruler, the old man stared into the eyes of the man in front of him. His gaze was filled with respect. Behind the young man were the recently anointed Nine Great Gods of War. The Nine Great Gods of War were meritorious. In just five year’s time, they contributed greatly. Their existence struck fear into their enemies’ hearts. The Nine Great Gods of War were given the official title as Gods of War. They enjoyed matchless power and wealth, and would soon be returning to the Nine Provinces, each ruling over a province of their own. They had the power to decide life and death.

However, at that moment, the Nine Great Gods of War stood humbly behind the young man.

Jack White, the one bestowed by Daxia with the title of Supreme Warrior. His authority was beyond that of the Gods of War. He was the most exalted.

Daxia was shocked. The media originally planned to officially announce the identities of the Nine Great Gods of War along with the Supreme Warrior. However, for some reason, they had only announced the identity of the Nine Great Gods of War. As for the Supreme Warrior’s identity, it became a mystery.

“Mm! I wonder how Selena is doing now? Since it’s settled here, they don’t need me anymore!”

The hint of a gentle smile finally appeared on that man’s chiseled face. Selena was his woman, his wife.

“Master, can we go with you to meet our master’s wife?” Behind him, one of the Nine Great Gods of War, Abner Young, asked curiously.

If people found out that the Nine Great Gods of War behind Jack, with their outstanding service, were his disciples, who knew what their reaction would be?!

“Let’s talk about that some other time!” Jack sighed, seemingly falling into a pensive mood.

Five years ago, the enemies counterattacked. Daxia suffered heavy losses and conscripted warriors from all over the country. Eastfield’s Taylor family were trapped by some scheme, forcing the Taylor family to enroll one of their younger generations to set an example for The Eastfield Region.

Old Master Taylor was advanced in age, Master Taylor had to maintain order, and Young Master Taylor was the only one from the younger generation. He was the only male heir. Naturally, Old Master Taylor was against having his only grandson to fight on the battlefield as he feared having his bloodline ended. However... The Taylor family could not back out of this.

Coincidentally, a delivery boy named Jack White appeared right then. Old Master Taylor had a sudden epiphany and made Jack marry into the Taylor family by faking a marriage with the Taylor family’s second daughter, Selena. That allowed Jack to head to the battlefield in Young Master Taylor’s stead as a member of the Taylor family.

Of course, Jack had his own conditions as well. It was to have Old Master Taylor pay him one million bucks for his sick mother’s treatment. Very quickly, the Taylor family’s second daughter was forced to marry Jack the delivery boy. That simple wedding ceremony made Selena Taylor into the joke of the century.

On the night of the wedding, the dispirited Selena ended up being the one to initiate the marriage consummation with Jack after becoming drunk. The next morning, she cried.

On the same morning, Jack was enlisted by the army. That parting lasted five years.

Over the course of five years, Jack had experienced countless life and death situations. However, he managed to endure those hardships with the thought of Selena waiting for him at home.

In five years, he transformed from the bastard son of the family into a major figure.

'Selena, don't you worry. I'll definitely honor my responsibility for you!' Jack thought, as he gripped his fists. With the thought of meeting Selena soon, his usually tranquil heart felt a twinge of excitement.

...

Four days later, a private plane descended slowly onto Eastfield International Airport.

"Eastfield! What a nostalgic place!" Stepping foot onto this land once again, the corner of Jack's mouth showed the hint of a smile.

Jack looked at Lana Zechs, then stated slowly, "From the moment I left the Southwestern battlefield, I'm no longer the Supreme Warrior. From now on, you can just call me brother!"

"Yes, mas—Brother Jack!" Lana said. She was assigned to this province and would be stationed here in Eastfield. She was happy to be returning here with her master.

An eye-catching Rolls-Royce Phantom with the plate A99999 was at the airport exit. There was a bodyguard with sunglasses that respectfully opened the car door as a person in his forties came out.

If anyone from a higher class were to find out that this person was James Drake, the richest person in Eastfield, their jaws would surely hit the ground. A person that could compel James to personally pick them up from the airport was obviously no ordinary person.

"Today will be worth it if I can see the face of the Queen of Hell!" James lamented. He knew full well what a God of War represented. Just as he finished his sentence, a man and woman nearby walked toward him.

"Goddess of war, Queen of Hell, Lana Zechs is here!" exclaimed one of the bodyguards respectfully as he saw them.

"Let's go!" James adjusted his shirt. For the first time, he walked over ever so carefully toward Lana.

"James Drake of the Drake family from Eastfield welcomes the goddess of war's return! We've already prepared the War God's Residence for you. Here's a black card. I hope the goddess of war likes it!" James led his men to Lana, bowing slightly as he passed her a black card.

However, Lana frowned and calmly stated, "Your information source is quite good. As expected of the Eastfield's richest person!"

With that said, she casually looked at the black card and laughed coldly. "Since you've arranged a place for me to stay, I'll oblige. As for this card, you can save it for yourself!"

"Yes, of course!" James wiped away his cold sweat before daring to raise his head. He then kept the black card.

"This is?" James looked at Jack as he probed with a question.

"We're just comrades that joined the army together! It's by chance that I'm returning to Eastfield and we kept each other company! You guys go on. I'll grab a taxi and head back!" Jack smiled faintly, then looked at Lana. "Keep in contact on the phone!"

"Of course!" Lana nodded in response.

Upon hearing the exchange, James' heart skipped a beat. That was the private plane to send the Gods of War. For this person to return alongside the Queen of Hell, his background was definitely something special. Furthermore, to his surprise, the way Lana looked at that man was filled with respect.

Very soon, a taxi was parked outside the gate of a row of villas. That was where the Taylor family was

located! Jack, having been through countless life and death situations, could not help but smile bitterly as he looked upon the villa's gates. Back then, if not for Old Master Taylor's threat with his own life, Selena would not have been willing to marry him.

It was also due to the Taylor family's irresponsible attitude toward her marriage that caused her to feel disappointed. That led to her getting drunk and having developed relations with a little delivery boy like him.

Although the marriage was originally a fake one, Selena had lost her virginity to him. Just before he departed, she told him that she would wait for his return. That touched Jack greatly. At that moment, Jack had finally returned!

Chapter 2

As Jack reminisced, a little girl with a dirty face walked up to the gates and sneakily looked inside. The little girl was rather skinny. She seemed to be four or five years old with a slightly yellowish skin tone. It would seem that she was malnourished.

"This little girl. Those eyes resemble Selena's!" Seeing the girl's cute appearance, Jack could not resist smiling.

A maid of the Taylor family came out. She looked at the guards standing by the door and pulled the little girl to another corner. For some reason, maybe due to the likeness of the girl's look with Selena, Jack's interest was piqued. He slowly walked up to them.

He then witnessed the maid carefully fish out two buns from her pockets and pass it to the little girl. "Kylie, there's only two today!"

"Thank you, pretty sister!" The little girl swallowed her saliva as her stomach growled. It was obvious that she was famished.

"Hurry up, eat it!" The maid patted the little girl's head. "Sigh, Young Master Taylor is just too mean!"

“No. I’ll take this home and eat it with Mommy, Grandpa, and Grandma!” The little girl took the buns before smiling blissfully. For her, the two buns in her hands were akin to this world’s greatest treasures.

A sports car quickly pulled over beside them, followed by half a dozen Audi A6s as well. “Ivan Taylor?”

Jack recognized the man immediately. After five years, Young Master Taylor had grown up. However, the changes were minimal. He was still as sheltered as before.

“Hehe, Shauna. What are you hiding there? Take it out and show it to me!” Ivan asked with a grin on his face.

“N-n-nothing...” The maid repeatedly shook her head. Meanwhile, little Kylie lowered her head as though she had just made a mistake.

Ivan crouched down and asked the little girl. “Kylie, please tell me what did Shauna just pass to you?”

“I won’t tell you. You’re a bad man. A very bad man!” Kylie raised her head with her lips pursed.

“A bad man?” Ivan chuckled. “Your mother ruined our Taylor family’s name by giving birth to you. Your mother is the evil one!”

With that said, Ivan stood up and shot a look at the two guards. “Shauna, you’re quite brazen. How dare you pass food to this little bastard? Do you have a death wish?” Ivan smiled coldly, then instantly sent a backhanded slap at Shauna’s face.

“Don’t hit her, you meanie!” Seeing that, the little girl immediately ran over and latched onto Ivan’s leg, giving it a big bite.

“Ah!” Ivan screamed in pain and pushed Kylie to the floor. “Are you born in the year of the dog? You

wild dog. How dare you bite me?"

Kylie was pushed to the floor and started crying. "You're a bad person. You're very bad!"

Ivan was in a rage, "Here's the buns this maid gave you. Come on, eat it. You and the maid get one each." He then threw the buns onto the floor and stomped them with his leather shoes. Ivan then stated, "If you don't eat, I'll break her hands and yours too!"

"Young master, I'll eat it. Don't make it difficult for the little one, please? I beg of you. Kylie is still Miss Selena's daughter. Selena is your cousin!"

Shauna knelt on the floor and grabbed the buns as she looked up at the high and mighty Ivan Taylor with a pitiful expression.

"Selena's...daughter?" Hearing those words, Jack's mind was blown. How did Selena end up with a daughter? Furthermore, Selena was a daughter of Master Taylor. How could her daughter be like a beggar?

"Didn't she say that she would wait for me? Could it be that she remarried that quickly after I went to war?" Jack's eyes turned red. He laughed bitterly in his heart and felt he was naive. He naively thought that Selena would really wait for him.

Ivan laughed and said, "Her father has long died on the battlefield for who knows how many years. This is just a bastard! Furthermore, we initially arranged for Selena to fake her marriage to that useless delivery boy. Turns out she had actually gotten pregnant with that trash's kid. We told her to abort the baby but she insisted on keeping it! Her fate today was all well-deserved. This is the fate of someone that soils our family's name!"

At that point, Jack's heart was in turmoil. This dirty little girl with patchy clothes was his own daughter? He clenched his fists as fury took over him. Just what did Selena experience in the past five years?

"Are you eating it? If you don't eat it, don't even think about leaving!" Ivan grabbed one of the dirty

buns he stomped on and lifted Kylie with one hand. He then stuffed the bun into the little girl's mouth.

Kylie, still crying said, "You big meanie. I won't eat. I won't eat..." The little girl's feet kicked about in the air, one of them landing on Ivan's clothes.

"Motherf*cker, you're asking for death. Do you know how expensive my clothes are?" Ivan looked at it, then forcefully flung Kylie aside.

"You beast! He's your niece!" Shauna screamed!

Jack's veins bulged from his temples. Kylie was petite. If she was thrown like that and hit the ground, how could she be fine? He took a step, then turned into a blur and appeared in front of Ivan. He then extended his arms to catch Kylie who was just thrown away.

"Ah!" Kylie was in shock. She opened her big googly eyes and stared at the brave-looking man. "w-w-who're you?" Kylie stared at Jack, obviously scared.

"Don't be scared, Kylie. Nobody will dare bully you, or your mother, in the future!" Jack's heart trembled as a familial feeling washed over him. This was his own daughter. This was his daughter with Selena.

"Who the f*ck is this? How dare you stick your nose in the Taylor family's business?" Ivan was extremely pissed after being caught by surprise.

In the span of five years, Jack went through a big change. He transformed from an ordinary delivery boy into the one and only Supreme Warrior of Daxia. Ivan was unable to recognize him in that brief moment.

"I'm definitely getting involved in this matter today!" Jack thought as he shot Ivan a cold glare. His aura that was stained with countless bloodshed caused Ivan to take a few steps back out of fear.

“Kylie, don’t be afraid. I’ll protect you!” Jack lovingly looked at Kylie in his arms, then gently placed her back on the ground.

“What are you f*cking doing standing in a daze? Go break his limbs!” Taking a look at the tall, strong guards, Ivan felt confident.

“Brat, you’re really brazen. How dare you stick your nose in Young Master Taylor’s matters!” Around a dozen experts surrounded Jack.

At that moment Jack sprang into action! Unfortunately, before Ivan could see clearly, the guards were all lying on the ground. There were screams of pain from broken arms and legs.

With the guards lying on the floor, Ivan was scared and the color drained from his face. “B-b-brat, who’re you? I’m the Taylor family’s young master. Things won’t end well for you if you offend me!” Ivan swallowed hard, his voice trembling.

“Who am I? I’m the one that went to the battlefield in your place!” Jack yelled internally. Jack’s gaze was intimidating. “Ivan Taylor, I fought your battle for you and faced death in your stead. There were dozens of times where I almost lost my life, yet here you are, feeding my daughter with a bun that you’ve stomped on?”

“Y-y-you’re Jack? Impossible. It’s been five years without any news. How could you have come back alive?” Ivan was scared witless. Not only the Taylor family, but the people of Eastfield City had thought that Jack had died. According to the reports, the battle a few years back was just too brutal with too many casualties.

“I’m sorry, but fate is on my side. I can’t die!” Jack sneered, then immediately sent him a kick.

Ivan fell down kneeling on the ground. The pain in his knees caused him to yell in pain.

“Eat those two buns. Otherwise, I don’t care if you’re Selena’s cousin or not, I’ll butcher you like the animal you are!”

Jack took the two dirt-covered buns and threw them in front of Ivan with a merciless gaze in his eyes.

Chapter 3

“Jack, are you f*cking crazy? Don’t forget your own identity. You’re only someone that married into our family. Don’t think that just because you’ve been a soldier for a few years, you can play around with me with that little extra strength.” Ivan gritted his teeth and tried to stand up.

Jack responded with a kick and pushed him back down, dusting up the area. “I’m not going to repeat my words!” Jack kept a foot on the back of Ivan’s hand.

“Ah!” Ivan shrieked. He felt as though his bones were being crushed. “B*stard...” Ivan raised his head and was scared speechless when he looked up to meet Jack’s merciless glare.

“Are you eating it or not? If you don’t, I’ll kill you right now!” Jack declared coldly.

“E-e-eat. I’ll eat it!” This time, Ivan was utterly terrified by Jack. Although his heart was unwilling, he could not help but take bites off the dirt-covered buns, stuffing it into his mouth.

“Shauna, thank you for your care of Kylie. Is Selena in there?” Jack walked up to the maid, remembering that Shauna used to be Selena’s personal maid that was very close to her.

“M-m-miss was exiled from the Taylor family. The family was against her giving birth to Kylie and she disobeyed them, that’s why...” Shauna’s eyes filled with tears as she recounted the event.

“Let’s go. Bring me to her!” Jack picked Kylie up. “Kylie, nobody will dare pick on you in the future!”

“Shauna, w-w-who is he?” Kylie was spooked by the earlier scene. It was obvious that she was still scared.

“Kylie, he’s your father. He’s not dead. He’s back!” Shauna teared up as she explained. Over the past five

years, Selena's life was horrible.

"Y-y-you're really my daddy?" Kylie pursed her lips as her eyes brightened. "They said my daddy is dead. Are you really my daddy? Mommy told me that daddy is definitely still alive. Mommy told me that if daddy is back, we won't have to pick up trash again!"

Jack teared up immediately. Despite his six-foot, five inch height and being the only Supreme Warrior of Daxia, his eyes turned red with tears.

"Shauna, y-y-you should make your choice properly. If you dare walk out of our Taylor Residence, you'll lose your job. You should know how many people are fighting for the chance to be a maid of the Taylor family!" Ivan shouted after he finally finished the two buns.

"You're full of nonsense!" Jack gave him a kick, sending him a few meters away. Ivan spat out a mouthful of blood and passed out.

"Good! This meanie deserves it!" Kylie squealed excitedly as she witnessed the scene.

"I don't want this job. Let's go. Master Jack, I'll bring your Miss Selena!" Shauna steeled her heart, then looked toward Kylie and asked, "Kylie, why aren't you greeting your daddy?"

Kylie lowered her head sheepishly. After a while, she finally spoke up with a sweet innocent voice, "Daddy..."

"Good girl. Look at you, covered with dirt. Let's go, I'll get you cleaned up and buy some clean clothes!" Jack lovingly kissed Kylie on the forehead. He felt that his heart was all warmed up. This was his own flesh and blood. Very quickly, Jack brought Shauna and Kylie to the best bathhouse in the Eastfield.

"Master, it's very expensive here..." Shauna reminded him softly.

“My daughter deserves to enjoy such treatment!” Jack did not look up all the while. His loving gaze remained fixated at Kylie who was in his arms.

“Sir, are you lost? This bathhouse does not welcome beggars!” Just as they reached the door, a server chuckled as he looked at Kylie’s dirty face. His gaze was filled with disgust.

“I know!” Jack sternly warned, “I’ll give you 10 minutes!”

“10 minutes?” The other party was confused.

“10 minutes to clear this place up. I need to give my precious daughter a bath!”

The server chuckled. “Sir, are you joking? We offer individual baths for over a thousand people, and that’s not including other activities. Unless you have around 80,000 dollars, I’m afraid you’re just dreaming to have me clear this place!”

Having said that, the server paused for a moment before continuing, “Looking at you, you’re not someone that can fork out that much money! Furthermore, even if you have the money, you can’t expect us to render our services to a beggar, right?”

Jack’s expression darkened. The surrounding had seemingly dropped a few degrees. “Say that again?”

“Your daughter is so dirty. Is she not a beggar?”

! In an instant the server was sent flying with a kick...

“F*ck you, what are you trying to do? Do you know what place this is?” The server climbed back up and shouted, “Guys, someone is here to cause trouble!”

“This place is under the Clark family’s jurisdiction. Is this fella crazy? He dares to start trouble here?”

“That’s right. We can’t help it if he’s here to court death!”

A few customers shook their heads as they witnessed the scene. One should know that luxurious bathhouses like this one were naturally backed by powerful forces.

To the extent that they might have the power to cause the entire Eastfield to tremble under their feet. Very soon, a group of sturdy men rushed in.

“Who dares to cause trouble at our place?” one of them shouted. He was a burly man.

“This territory belongs to the Clark family. You’re quite brave to dare cause trouble here!” said another guy.

“My daughter is not a beggar. It’s fine if you humiliate me. If anyone dares to offend my daughter, it won’t end well for them!” All these years, his daughter must have gone through much suffering. Jack was only hoping to make it up to her and Selena.

“Kid, it’s you. You’re quite daring! Do you know who I am? I’m Black Dragon of Eastfield, general of the Clark family. Kneel and admit your wrongdoing right now, then get out of my sight! My establishment doesn’t serve ill-dressed folks, nor do we serve stinking beggars. Your daughter is definitely a beggar...” The burly man took two steps forward with an arrogant look on his face.

“What!? He’s Black Dragon? Tch, tch, I heard that he’s a fearsome fighter. All his achievements came from his kills! Once, he managed to kill over a hundred people and saved Master Clark’s life. That story was spread all over the streets!”

Some onlookers took a few steps back, feeling scared. They felt a sense of dread welling up from within.

“You want me to kneel to you?” Jack was astonished. “I’m afraid the one that dares to have me kneel is not born yet. I’ve already forgotten how many people I’ve killed!”

“Interesting. You dare act tough in front of me. Hahaha, I’m afraid you weren’t even born yet when I started chopping others with my saber!” Black Dragon laughed out loud. “I’m sorry kid, I know full well how many people of great power there are in Eastfield. Coincidentally, you’re not on that list!”

“Today... You’ll get to know me!” Just as he finished his sentence, there was a flash of movement and the Black Dragon fell down just like that. Black Dragon remained laying on the ground, his eyes filled with surprise. He was no longer breathing. Silence enveloped the area!

“This is bad. B-B-Black Dragon is dead!” Someone shouted in fear after taking a look.

Chapter 4

“Six minutes remaining. Clear this venue. Since you’re just offended, don’t even think about charging the fee!” Jack stared coldly at the remaining people.

Although they were tough as well, they were nothing compared to Black Dragon. None of them dared to look Jack in the eye. “Everyone, leave immediately or else!”

They started shouting immediately. The other customers were obviously terrified from before and ran away like their lives depended on it. They could not see how Black Dragon had died. It was as though something supernatural occurred.

In less than a minute, the entire bathhouse was empty! A beautiful female server walked out meekly after being signaled by the bouncers and asked in a worried tone, “Sir, t-t-the place is empty. How can we serve you?”

“Go get a set of branded clothing and a sumptuous meal for my daughter. If not, don’t even think of leaving here alive!” Jack carried Kylie inside, causing the server and bouncers to have the color drain from their faces.

“Of course, sir. We’ll get to it immediately!” The beautiful female server recovered from her daze and bowed deeply toward Jack’s back!

Jack brought Kylie into the bath and took the old dirty clothes off her. The corner of his mouth twitched. Kylie was scared. There were some scars on her supple skin.

“Kylie, did daddy scare you earlier?” Jack smiled lovingly at Kylie as a tear almost escaped his eye.

“Daddy, you’re amazing but also terrifying!” Kylie pursed her lips, then finally peeped carefully.

“Terrifying?” Jack was stunned. Kylie was only four years old. That was an age where they were most innocent, yet he took action right in front of her and had even killed a person.

To him, killing a single person was no different from eating or drinking. However, to Kylie, that was...

“Alright. Kylie, from now on, daddy won’t be so terrifying. However, those were bad people and they deserve to be punished!” Jack carefully helped Kylie wash up. “From now on, I’ll have you and your mother live comfortably. You can have a comfortable life just like other kids!”

The little girl seemed confused. Beside them, Shauna smiled. “Master, would you like to give Miss Selena a call? If she knows that you’re back, she’ll definitely be delighted!”

“No need. We’ll head over soon!” Jack calmly stated, “Shauna, from now on you’ll continue taking care of Selena and Kylie. Don’t worry, I won’t skimp on your salary!”

“Oh right, I’ve heard that the retired soldiers are given a decent pension. The lowest is rumored to be around 10 to 20 thousand. Master, how much do you get?”

Shauna quickly thought of something, then laughed. “I’m very close to Miss Selena. It’s for the best that

I can take care of Miss Selena. As for the salary, it's fine as long as I have enough to survive!"

"It will be sufficient!" Jack laughed it off. To him, money was nothing. He could replace the richest person in Eastfield with just a phone call if he so wished.

Shauna contemplated for a moment, then spoke again. "Oh yeah, Master Jack, Kylie's surname is Taylor. It can't be helped. Your in-laws were mindful of your previous status and thought you didn't make it..."

"Oh..." Jack responded, then said, "It's okay. She's the daughter of Selena and I!"

Very quickly, the pretty server brought over some delicious foods and a beautiful princess-styled dress. Placing them to one side, she then carefully retreated out of the room. After her bath, Kylie silently swallowed hard, feeling famished.

Jack lovingly touched Kylie's face as he watched her wolf her food down, saying, "Silly little girl. Eat slowly! After you're done, we'll go see your mommy!"

After Kylie finished her meal, she grabbed the two slices of leftover cake with her hands. "Daddy, I... I wanna bring this back for mommy and grandma!" She looked at Jack, then asked in a worried tone, "Can I?"

Jack was speechless. It would seem that his earlier fights had indeed scared Kylie and made her afraid of him. "Of course! As long as you're happy!"

Carrying Kylie in his arms, Jack was ready to leave with Shauna. However, before they even reached the door, an Audi stopped right outside and a bald man got out of it. The bald man had a scary face with a long scar over it. His eyes were sharp.

One of the servers could not resist snickering. "Excellent. The Clark family's number one fighter is here. Hahaha, that kid is screwed!"

“That’s right. Master Clark was furious after receiving the phone call and had Dan Jameson come over to turn that kid into a cripple.” The other guard snickered and watched from the sidelines, hoping for a good show.

“Where’s he?” Dan walked over to Jack after asking around.

“Kid, you’re quite the man, having managed to kill Black Dragon! However, it won’t end well for you today!” Dan said in a deep voice, his eyes narrowed.

“If I want you dead, you won’t survive for more than three seconds!” Jack said as he looked at his opponent, then at Kylie in his arms. “However, my daughter is here. I don’t want to scare her. Why don’t we have an arm-wrestling match?!”

“Arm-wrestling?” Dan was caught off-guard. “Do you think I’m here to play with you?”

“Of course it’s not to play around. You just said that your master wants to cripple me, didn’t you? What about this. If you win, I’ll voluntarily cripple my limbs! If you lose, I’ll just need you to cut off one finger!” Jack bellowed in laughter. After experiencing so much killing, he could tell with a look that this person was a ruthless one.

“Interesting!” Dan smiled, then walked up to a table. “Kid, get over here. Since you like to play this, I’ll play with you!”

“Shauna, hold Kylie for me!” Jack then passed Kylie to Shauna.

Very quickly, both their hands clasped together.

“Begin!” announced one of the guards.

“This kid dares to arm wrestle with Dan? Doesn’t he know how strong Dan is?”

“That’s right. Dan can potentially kill a cow with one punch!”

A few buff guys were watching the show with their hands crossed in front of their chests.

If Jack lost and tried to deny the results, Dan would teach him a lesson on regret.

“Argh!” Dan poured in all his strength, just to realize that Jack’s arm had not moved an inch.

“I-I-Impossible!?” He gasped a mouthful of air. The next instant, Jack snickered and Dan lost the match.

“I believe you won’t deny the result. One finger. As for which one you choose, I’ll let you decide!”

Jack then took Kylie back in his arms and left the scene.

“Who’s that guy? His strength is amazing!” Dan finally said with disbelief after Jack was long gone.

“Brother Dan, you’re not really cutting a finger, are you?” asked a person as he walked up to the bald guy. He swallowed hard while looking at the empty gate.

Chapter 5

Shauna led Jack to the door of a small, dilapidated courtyard house. There was a big banyan tree in the courtyard. Looking in from there, it appeared tranquil. However, there was the problem that the place was too run down.

“You’re telling me that my mother, Selena, and the in-laws are staying here?” Seeing the house in front of him, Jack felt sorry for them.

Selena was the daughter of Master Taylor. She was fantastically talented. Back then, she was even known as a stunningly beautiful director that exuded pride. Countless people courted her.

At that moment, because of her decision to keep the kid, she was kicked out of the household to stay at such a place!

Shauna smiled bitterly. "There's also your little uncle! He was still young five years ago, but he's now 19 and staying here."

"That many people!" Jack's eyes turned red. "Selena must've had a hard time!"

However, they quickly noticed a Bentley was parked by the courtyard.

"Why's there a Bentley here?" Jack scowled, feeling suspicious.

"I don't know. After all, I hardly come here. Sigh, too many things have happened over the five years. Miss Selena has been waiting for you all the while! However, her parents' patience ran out a long time ago. Furthermore, they had a strong bias against you...claiming that you forced yourself on Miss Selena during the wedding night, taking advantage of her drunkenness..." Shauna said carefully with a frown.

"Sigh, I can only slowly make it up to them. I've caused father and mother-in-law to suffer together!" Jack sighed deeply. He too wanted to stay by the side of his woman, and yet was just as helpless.

Just as he entered, Jack scowled and raised his hand, signaling Shauna to keep quiet for the sound coming from within the house made him angry.

The voice of Selena's mother could be heard. "Young Master Clark, don't you worry. There has been no news of that kid for five years. He's long gone! I'm planning to go apply for a death certificate. By then, you can marry our Selena!"

“Haha, thank you very much!” Young Master Clark laughed loudly, then said, “Auntie, there’s actually no need to get that death certificate. The marriage certificate is just a piece of paper. I, Ken Clark, am not such a superficial person. When the time comes, we just need to arrange a glorious and grand marriage ceremony! The most important thing is for Selena to agree to our marriage.”

“Agree! Of course she’d agree!” Selena’s mother immediately thumped her chest and said, “Don’t you worry. Her father and I will help you persuade her!”

“Really? However, she is quite the stubborn one! Back then, if not for her insisting to give birth to that bastard, you guys wouldn’t be kicked out of the Taylor family to suffer alongside her over here!” Young Master Clark then added calmly, “Sigh, five years ago, Selena was the prettiest girl in the Eastfield. Look at her now, what has she become?”

“That’s right. It’s all that delivery boy’s fault. The original deal was just a faked marriage, yet he ended up impregnating our Selena.” Once again, Mrs. Taylor added, “Our Selena is really obstinate, stubbornly claiming that child to be her flesh and blood, swearing to care for her!”

“It’s okay. Uncle, Auntie, I’m sincerely in love with Selena. Once Selena is with me, wealth is not an issue!” Having said that, Young Master Clark took out a jade bracelet. “I had someone bring this jade bracelet over from Shanghai. It’s worth quite a sum. I’ll give it to Auntie as a gift!”

“T-T-This... How can we accept this?”

...

Beyond the door, Jack’s expression turned uglier by the second. His fists gripped tightly together. He tried his best to suppress the raging fire in his heart. After calming himself, he then knocked on the door.

“Who’s there?” Mrs. Taylor’s voice sounded annoyed as she opened the gate.

“Who’re you?” Mrs. Taylor, looked at Jack suspiciously, then looked at Kylie, asking, “Why are you holding onto our Kylie?”

“Grandma, h-h-he’s my daddy!” Kylie looked at Jack, then said softly, “Daddy said that with him home, nobody would dare to bully me and mommy ever again!”

Fiona was dumbstruck on the spot, then quickly exclaimed in astonishment, “Wonderful. Jack, the shameless one, is actually alive... You have the gall to show up now? You need to compensate my daughter for her lost youth. Our family is in a rut because of you!”

“Who? Who’s back? It’s that bastard Jack?” Selena’s father rushed out, limping forward to grab at Jack. “I’ll kill you, you beast. If not for you tainting our Selena’s purity, would she need to make a living from collecting trash? If not for you, my leg wouldn’t have been crippled!”

Jack had a huge shock. How did Selena end up collecting trash? How did her father’s leg end up like this? Although it was not his fault as Selena took the initiative, he was also drunk during that time and did not resist the urge. However, it was still because of him that they ended up like this. No wonder Andrew and Fiona would hate him to this extent.

Jack’s heart was wracked with guilt. ‘That’s right, if not for my impulsive behavior, their entire family wouldn’t have had to suffer.’

“Shauna, take Kylie over to the courtyard to play for a while!” Jack passed Kylie over to Shauna.

“Brat, of all times, you chose to come back now. Why are you here? It’d be better if you had just died on the battlefield!”

Fiona was in tears. “I think you’re just unwilling to let our Selena live a single day in comfort. You animal!”

“I’ll teach you a lesson!” Andrew immediately sent a slap at Jack.

However, the next instant, his hand was firmly in Jack’s grasp. “Father, I’m sorry. It’s because of me that you had to suffer. Regardless, Selena has already given birth to Kylie. I, Jack White, will take full responsibility. I won’t let her down. She has waited for me all this while. I’ll let her live a comfortable life.”

“Huh, you dare to grab my hand? Get out of my sight!” Andrew was pissed. As expected of a retired soldier, Jack’s strength was great. He was unable to move an inch.

Unexpectedly, right at that moment, Young Master Clark approached them with a smile. “This kid is back just in time. Since he’s not dead, we can have him divorce Selena. Moreover, Kylie is his kid. He’s her father, therefore he should take custody over Kylie. From now on, we’ll just have Kylie follow him!”

Having said that, he further added with a grin on his face, “After all, I’m unwilling to help someone take care of their baggage. Without this burden, both mine and Selena’s life will be much better!” No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 6-10

Chapter 6

“That’s right. You’re absolutely right! To be honest, I don’t really like this little girl anyway!”

Fiona nodded repeatedly. “After all, she shouldn’t have existed!”

Hearing those words, Jack felt the urge to kill them all in just one strike. However, deep down, he reminded himself to stay calm. After all, Fiona was Selena’s mother, his mother-in-law. This place was no longer the battlefield where he killed as he wished. At the very least, Fiona and Andrew were not his enemies. Andrew’s leg was in its current condition because of his rash actions with Selena on their wedding night. Their hatred for him was reasonable. However, there was an outsider present.

Jack smiled coldly, then looked toward Young Master Clark. "Kylie is my daughter. She's not baggage, nor is she a bastard child. You have to kneel down and apologize for your words!" At that point, Jack paused for a moment, then continued, "If not because of my unwillingness to stain this place on my first day home, you'd be dead by now!"

"Haha, brat, did I hear you correctly? Do you know who you're talking to?" Young Master Clark laughed, then pointed at the Bentley outside. "I heard that you used to be a delivery boy. A few years of war as a soldier has made you a tough guy, eh? You're nothing in my eyes. Do you know how much that car costs? A person like you can't afford to buy one in your entire life."

"That's right. Jack, stop your meddling. Take your daughter and leave!" Fiona took a step forward, then added, "Stop messing with my daughter's search for happiness!"

"Mother, unless Selena personally asks me to go away, I will never leave her side!" Jack looked at Fiona with a resolved expression on his face.

"What do you have to compare with me? How do you qualify to be with her? A person needs to understand his own shortcomings, no?" Young Master Clark took a step forward, then jabbed at Jack's chest. "You're just a useless soldier..."

Smack! To their surprise, Jack sent Young Master Clark a few steps back with a slap. He spat a mouthful of blood along with three teeth.

Young Master Clark screamed while his cheeks burned. "Y-Y-You dare to hit me? You're courting death! Do you know who I am?" Young Master Clark was furious. He wanted to fight back, yet dared not to. The person in front of him had returned from the battlefield. He, a pampered young master, was surely no match for Jack.

"Jack, do you know who he is? He's the Clark family's young master. The Clark family is a lot wealthier and has more influence than our Taylor family!"

"I don't care who he is. He dared to badmouth my daughter and have unclean thoughts about Selena. It's already generous of me to not kill him!" Jack coldly declared.

"Alright, you're ballsy and quite capable. Do you dare to let me make a phone call?" Ken said menacingly. "I wouldn't be scared even if you made 10 calls!"

Jack could not be bothered with him. Such trash meant nothing in his eyes.

"Jack? Jack White?" Right then, a melodious voice could be heard coming from behind them. Jack's heart trembled. He turned around to see Selena, still beautiful as ever, but dressed in simple garments. His eyes immediately turned watery. "Selena, I'm back."

"This is wonderful. I knew it. I knew you'd survive!" Selena's body trembled, dropping the bags filled with trash to the ground. "It's good that you're back. Our child must not be without a father!" Selena's voice quickly regained its calm.

Must not be without a father! Those six simple words made Jack realize Selena's feeling for him at that moment. That was right. They hardly had any feelings for each other as the marriage was just for show. What happened that night was due to Selena's rashness... As for the child, she could not bear to abort her as she was her own flesh and blood. Just six simple words fully expressed the helplessness in her heart.

"Selena, rest assured. Nobody will dare to bully you from now on!" Jack raised his hand, declaring matter-of-factly, "I swear!"

"My dear, have him get out of here and take Kylie along. He will only bring trouble!" Seeing her own daughter come home, Fiona grabbed onto Selena's hand and said in tears, "Divorce him quick. Young Master Clark just promised us that he will take good care of you and us. I don't want to see you collecting trash again. I also don't wish to live in such a difficult situation anymore. Staying in a place like this is making us the laughing stock of others."

“Ma, I’m sorry. I can’t abandon Kylie! Although Jack might be useless, he’s still my man and Kylie’s father. I believe that if we work hard together, our life will definitely get better!” Selena managed a bitter smile, her eyes filled with helplessness.

“H-H-He hit Young Master Clark right after he returned home. Look, even his teeth fell out!” Andrew was squatting on the floor in anger, feeling disappointed.

“What?!” Selena looked at the teeth and bloodstains on the floor, then shot an astonished look at Jack. “W-W-Why did you hit him? You’re too rash! This will be troublesome!”

“It’s fine, honey. You don’t have to worry!” Jack smiled calmly, silently appreciating the woman standing before him. She was just as pretty as before.

“What do you mean there’s nothing to worry about? Quickly come apologize to Young Master Clark. He’s the most promising child of the Clark family’s younger generation and also the Eldest Young Master. He’s the heir apparent, the Clark family’s future master! This time, you’re really in big trouble!” Selena was extremely worried, urgently pushing Jack toward Young Master Clark.

“Apologize? Ha!” Once again, Young Master Clark spat out the blood in his mouth, then looked up and puffed his chest. “It’s too late to apologize now. My dad has ordered Dan Jameson to come and settle this matter!”

“Dan Jameson?” Jack was baffled. Was that not the person he had just defeated in an arm-wrestling match? What a coincidence.

Seeing how Jack was in a daze, Young Master Clark burst out laughing. “What’s this? Scared? Do you know who Dan is? He’s our Clark family’s number one fighter that will kill without remorse. He took down two to three hundred people all on his own. Do you think you’re so great just because you’ve been a soldier? Ha, what an ignorant fool!”

“Young Master Clark, please show your generosity and let this person go. He’s just a boor. Why bother?”

Selena went forward to put in a kind word for Jack, feeling helpless.

“I’ve lost a few teeth and you’re telling me to let him go? Are you kidding me?” Young Master Clark massaged his swollen cheek, filled with anger. “I can let this slide as long as you divorce him right now...and marry me!”

“Young Master Clark, is that necessary? With your status, you can easily find a beautiful young lady. Why would you insist on a married woman like myself?” Selena smiled awkwardly. “Young Master Clark, please stop your jokes!”

“I’m sorry, but you’re the type I like!” Young Master Clark laughed coldly. “Since you’re unwilling to divorce him, then I’m not to be blamed. This brat will die today!”

Chapter 7

“I’ll die today? I don’t think so!” Jack was unfazed. He took a look outside and saw that Shauna had already brought Kylie to play under the banyan tree.

“Hmph, I’ll see how tough you think you are!” Young Master Clark could not be bothered to talk with Jack. He believed that Jack would be regretting soon enough. Very quickly, a few cars pulled over just outside. Dan Jameson, the Clark family’s number one fighter, walked in along with a few muscular guys.

Just as he entered the courtyard, Dan shouted, “Who’s the person that dared to bully our young master? Do you wish to die?” At that moment, Dan was furious as he had just ran into someone he could not afford to offend, causing him to lose a finger. He had just only finished treating his wound at the hospital when his master gave him another phone call, telling him that Young Master Clark was beaten up, sending him over to settle the issue.

“It’s that trash named Jack White. He’s just a stinking, retired soldier, yet he dares to behave arrogantly before me!” Young Master Clark immediately started smugly mouthing off once he saw Dan approach with his men.

“Motherf*cker, this is really—” Dan bellowed, rushing as he was about to take action to vent his frustrations. However, seeing the person standing in front of Ken, he was almost petrified by fear.

“How unexpected. We meet again!” Jack smiled calmly, then looked at the bandaged hand of the other party. “It seems you have a great personality. You’re a real man that keeps your word!”

At first, Ken could not understand what Jack was talking about. He frowned and looked at Dan, asking, “You’ve met?”

Dan smiled bitterly, then nodded. “Young Master Clark, uhm... It’s about time for lunch. Why don’t we head back?” While he spoke, Dan had even winked a few times at Ken.

“Lunch? What lunch? Go beat him up. Damn it! If I don’t vent my frustrations today, I’m not a man!” Ken huffed, failing to understand Dan’s implications.

Smack! Jack took a step forward and gave Young Master Clark a slap to his face.

“You... Dan, get him!”

Smack!

“Dan...”

Smack! After a few consecutive slaps, Young Master Clark almost passed out.

“Dan, why aren’t you and your men taking action?” Young Master Clark was on the verge of tears. He felt so wronged. He had never been treated this way before. Dan did not dare to take action. The men around him had also witnessed first hand how Black Dragon was killed. They lowered their heads in fear, not daring to take a single step forward.

“Sorry for disturbing!” The unexpected had just happened. Dan walked up to Jack and bowed respectfully, then with a wave of his hand, he ordered his underlings, “Take Young Master Clark home!” In an instant, the thugs carried Ken and went out the door.

“Put me down. Dan, what’s wrong with you? I’m asking you to cripple that brat. Dan, why are you such a wuss today?” Young Master Clark was cursing all the way out, but it had no effect. He was carried away just like that.

“This...” Fiona and Andrew were both flabbergasted. At first, they thought that Jack was done for. Who would have thought such a dramatic scene would ensue?

“Could it be that Dan is afraid of you? You know each other?” Selena asked with a frown on her face.

“That’s a long story!” Jack smiled bitterly, then looked at the bag of trash on the floor, asking, “Selena, why are you collecting trash? What happened in the past five years?”

All was good until that topic was brought up. Fiona immediately boiled with rage again.

Enraged, she walked forward and was just about to push Jack out of the door. “It’s all because of you, trash! If not for you forcing yourself on my daughter and impregnating her with Kylie, would she be kicked out of the family? Do you think we’d be collecting trash for a living?”

“Ma, stop that. He’s not to be blamed for that matter. It was my own decision. He did not force himself on me!” Selena retorted strongly, “The incident that night was nothing to be regretful about. I’ll never regret my decision. I’ll be responsible for my own actions. Didn’t Grandpa have me marry him? He’s the man I’ll be with!”

“Impossible. It must be this scoundrel forcing himself on you. You must’ve been drunk, and he took advantage of that. That must be it! You’re the Taylor family’s Eldest Miss and he’s only a delivery boy. How can he be a worthy partner for you?” Fiona refused to believe Selena’s statement. She glared at Jack through gritted teeth. “Brat, I don’t care. You must compensate my daughter for her loss of youth

and divorce her. Let her marry Young Master Clark.”

“Mother, I’ve already told you. Unless Selena says so, I won’t be divorcing her!” Jack was determined. He looked at Selena, finally showing a gentle expression as he asked, “Selena, can you tell me what happened? Even if you’re kicked out of the Taylor family, you shouldn’t have to resort to collecting trash, right? With your networking and capabilities, how could you not find a good job?”

Selena made a bitter smile. That smile was filled with untold suffering. “Do you think I wished for this? After getting pregnant, I was told to abort her. I disagreed and was kicked out. What kind of job could I take while being pregnant? Moreover, my Grandpa gave out an order to ban all affiliated companies from hiring me!” By that point, Selena took a seat by the table. Her gaze had a pitiful look. “Some companies were willing to hire me, for example, those from the Clark family. Although they were willing, the condition was to abort the child. Moreover, Young Master Clark had always been eyeing me! What else could I do? The Taylor family was even worse. They would only leave me alone when I collected trash. Otherwise, they’d be sending people to destroy my business even if I just set up a simple stall!”

“Damn it!” By that point, Jack could not bear listening on. The wife of the Supreme Warrior was actually forced to collect trash and left without help?

“You see, it’s all because of you. If not for trash like you, would our family be in such a rut?”

Fiona was still as disgusted as before. “Furthermore, Selena’s dad’s leg was broken when he worked as a porter. Look at him now! Sob, sob, sob, why is my life so difficult!”

“Father, mother, I’m sorry. I didn’t expect it to turn out this way!” Seeing Fiona in tears and how the whole family could not even have a decent meal, Jack’s heart was wracked with guilt. “Don’t you worry. Now that I’m back, nobody will dare to bully you in the future!”

“You’re just talking nonsense!” Fiona’s voice trembled, clearly agitated as she pointed at Jack. “You’re just a soldier. What can you do? At most, you can only run your mouth. The way I see it, it’s 10 to 100 times better for our Selena to marry Young Master Clark or that Young Master Wilson when compared to trash like you!”

Chapter 8

“Ma, no matter what you say, he’s still Kylie’s father and your son-in-law. Don’t ridicule him like that anymore! Those matters from the past are far behind us now. You should stop talking about it too!” Selena was just as kind and understanding as before.

“Bullsh*t! We’ve never recognized him as our son-in-law. This doesn’t count!” Fiona retorted.

“That’s right. If not for him, my leg wouldn’t be in this state!” Andrew was similarly holding his grudge.

“But what mistake did he commit? Back then, I slept with him out of spite. I didn’t expect myself to be pregnant from that!” Selena felt helpless. It was indeed her own brazen action that caused this. However, she really could not bear aborting the child. The situations they face up to that point were considered compensations for the mistake she made back then.

“But you didn’t have to carry the child. You...you’re really trying to give me a heart attack!”

Fiona stomped her foot in frustration.

“Nevermind. It is what it is. He’s back from the war. Let’s just see if he can find something to do in the future. Our lives will improve eventually!” Andrew took out a cigarette and lit it. He was indeed angry when he saw Jack, but at that point, there was nothing he could do. After all, Kylie was his granddaughter, the flesh and blood of his own daughter.

“How much better can it get? Can it compare to back when we were staying in the townhouse?”

Fiona was still huffing angrily.

“Selena, where’s my mother? How come I haven’t seen her?” Jack frowned. He had been back for quite a while, but he had yet to see his mother. Shauna told him earlier that his mother was staying with them.

“She’s still working. We can’t help that. Your mother is uncultured and old. She can only work as a cleaner outside. Her monthly salary is quite low, and she has split some over for us. As a family, we can only make do!” Selena finally said after a bitter smile.

“Come, bring me to her! You should know which street she’s in charge of, right?” Hearing that his own mother was working as a cleaner and the entire family’s income was dependent on her and Selena’s trash collecting, Jack felt very uncomfortable.

“Brat, I’m telling you that you need to divorce our Selena. Moreover, I won’t let you off without at least ten million bucks of compensation for her lost youth!” Just as they were leaving, Fiona’s furious outburst could be heard from behind.

...

At that moment, the scorching sun was high in the sky. The blazing summer day caused the temperature on the ground to rise continuously. On the side of a street, a middle-aged woman was holding onto a hat as she cleaned the road. Thud! An empty mineral water bottle was thrown right in front of that middle-aged woman. The middle-aged woman raised her head and saw two youngsters along with some girls in sexy short dresses. She shook her head in resignation. “Sigh, youngsters these days...they don’t even know how to throw it into the trash can right there.”

Unexpectedly, the cleaner’s lamentation was heard by the other party. “F*ck, you’re just a cleaner. Why are you spouting so much nonsense? I’m throwing it in front of you. What about it? If I don’t throw my trash here, you cleaners would be getting paid for nothing, isn’t it?” The youngster that threw the bottle immediately started running his mouth. Having said that, he followed with spitting on the floor. “People from the lower rung of society can only get so far!”

“That’s right. If not for us creating trash, they’ll be unemployed!” One of the young girls with curly hair was wearing a black skirt and pantyhose. She started chewing on sunflower seed and threw the shells all over the place. “Clean it up. If you don’t clean properly, you might get a pay cut!”

The two youngsters joined in and grabbed a handful of sunflower seeds, munching away. “That’s right. Auntie, clean it properly. Hahaha!”

“Y-y-you guys are still so young, yet so uncultured. The trash can is right there. Don’t you know that

littering is a very uncultured thing to do?" The cleaning lady was aggravated. Under the hot blazing summer sun, she was on the verge of passing out from the heat, yet the street that she spent so much effort cleaning up was...

"Haha, you're teaching me about culture? You're just a cleaner, yet you're talking about culture. What a joke!" The first youngster burst into laughter once more.

Witnessing the scene, Jack and Selena almost had an aneurysm. These youngsters were too uncivilized. "What's the point of you guys bullying an elderly here?"

Before Jack could take a step forward, Selena was already rushing up to them, shouting angrily, "What's with that behavior? People are working so hard to clean the street. Can't you guys just do your part to maintain a nice environment?"

"Aiyo, pretty lady, are you trying to stand up for her? You look pretty and have a shapely body. However, you're a little too poor. Look at those patchy clothes!" That youngster shot a look at Selena and was surprised by what he saw. This woman was wearing such old and simple clothes, yet they could not cover up her beauty.

"Don't you know to mind your own business?" The two girls, instead, gave Selena disgusted looks.

"Selena, why are you here?" Jack's mother, Joan Xavier quickly pulled Selena back. "Nevermind, it's fine. They'll go away after a while. I'll just clean it up after that!"

"Mother, they're too much. They've crossed the line!" Selena felt angry. Her fists were tightly gripped, but she could not do anything.

"Hey pretty, you look quite cute when you're angry!" The youngster took a look, growing more excited. He could not resist teasing, "Come here. If you give me a kiss, we'll stop littering. Deal?"

“You dare pick on my woman!?” Jack could not hold back any longer. He stepped forward and stared them in the eye.

“You’re...” Joan was caught off guard. She quickly recognized Jack and started tearing up. “Jack, y-y-you’re back?”

Jack turned around. His eyes were similarly tearing up, grabbing Joan’s hands tightly, “Ma, I’m sorry. Your son made you suffer. I was unable to be by your side for the past five years!”

“No, I’m fine. I’m doing just fine! All that matters is that you’re home safe and sound. They all said that you’ve died on the battlefield. I knew you’d definitely come back alive!” Joan’s passionate tears flowed as her voice trembled. Her pair of old callused hands holding onto Jack’s hands quietly, fearing that it would be all a dream if she let go of them.

“I’m back, I’m really back. We’ll never be separated again and live comfortably in the future!” Jack nodded repeatedly. “Your son has been unfilial for making you worried!”

“No, no, you’re a good boy. I know you married into the family just to get money for my treatment. You went to war for our country!” Joan’s tears blurred her eyesight. “I’m very satisfied to have such a son!”

“F*ck, are you guys from the entertainment department? What’s with all these dramatic flairs? Sickening!” That youngster was frustrated. However, his words caused Jack’s eyes to flicker with murderous intent.

Chapter 9

“That’s right. These bums are talking about war and bringing glory to the country. What a joke!”

The other youngster snickered along.

Bang, bang! However, the very next instant, both youngsters only saw a blur then was sent flying away and slammed into the wall behind them, causing it to crash. Both of them spat out a mouthful of fresh

blood. Their legs stiffened, then stopped moving.

“Ah! Murder!” Both the girls shrieked as though they had just seen a ghost, running away immediately.

“Oh no, Jack, you’ve killed someone. What if they’re some important people or belong to some organization? What’re we going to do?”

Seeing the two of them lying there motionless, Joan went pale. “Y-y-you’re just too hot-headed. This is not the battlefield. There are some people that we can’t afford to offend. Do you think you’re still on the battlefield where killing your opponent was fine?”

“Why can’t you hold your temper? They’ve only said a few words!” Selena was extremely frustrated as well, unsure of what to do.

Seeing how the two women he cared for the most was worrying about him, Jack felt his heart all warmed up. “Ma, Selena, don’t you worry. They’ve just passed out. I know how to hold back. They’ll be waking up in a while!” Jack made a bitter smile as he explained.

“Really?” Selena quickly stepped forward and placed her fingers under their noses for confirmation. She then let out a sigh of relief. “They’re still breathing. It should be fine.”

“Come, let’s leave quickly!” Joan ushered while looking around.

“Ma, let’s go. You can forget about your job. It’s about time for you to enjoy your life!” Jack looked at both women with a carefree smile on his face, stating, “Let’s go. It’s still early. I’ll bring you both to buy a few sets of suitable clothes!”

“A few sets?” Hearing that, Joan was shocked. “And where is your money? Furthermore, how can I stop working? There are so many people I need to feed. Our whole family is depending on Selena and me! Son, listen to me. Selena had suffered a lot of hardships for Kylie’s sake. You better treat her well and

not let her down!”

“That can’t be it. Father-in-law’s leg might be stopping him from working, but mother-in-law and Clifford should be able to work right? Are they also being suppressed at work?” Jack scowled. Clifford Taylor was still young in the past and was unable to be enlisted. However, five years have passed and he should be an adult by now. He should be helping out the family.

Speaking of them, Joan could not help but sigh deeply. “They’re blaming everything on you for their ill fate. Moreover, they’re used to being pampered back when they were in the Taylor family. How do you expect them to be willing to work? They’re just unwilling to look for work!”

“My brother is too useless. He hardly comes home, and every time he does, it’s to ask for money!” Speaking of the useless brother, even Selena was frustrated.

Having said that, Selena looked at Jack. “However, now that Jack’s back, the Taylor family didn’t set any restrictions on him. It’d be great if he can go get a job soon!”

“Them restricting me?” Hearing that, Jack chuckled. “It’s already very kind of me to not suppress the Taylor family!”

“Look at you. Just because you’ve been a soldier, you’re behaving all different now. You’ve grown tougher. However, it has also made you boastful!” Joan looked at her son, her face glowing blissfully. Everyone told her that Jack was surely dead, but she did not believe them. She was sure that Jack would make it back safely eventually, and that day arrived.

“Come on, let’s go get you some clothes!” Jack pushed Joan forward.

“Where did your money come from?” Selena thought for a moment, then a sudden realization hit her. “Oh right, I’ve heard that the soldiers returning from war are given rewards. Seems like you’ve gotten some rewards, didn’t you?”

“Is that so?” Joan was delighted. “Then that should be tens of thousand, right? You’ve been a soldier for

five full years after all. However, you should be thrifty. Kylie is about to start kindergarten. Nowadays, better kindergartens are very expensive! It should be more than tens of thousand bucks. I've heard from several people returning from the battlefield. One of them was awarded over two hundred thousand bucks, and that's a common occurrence!"

Selena gave it some thought, then smiled delightfully. "That's wonderful. If we have two hundred thousand bucks, then our lives would be more comfortable."

"Ma, you don't need to worry about it. If Kylie's attending kindergarten, it must be the best kindergarten!" Jack took Joan and Selena along, quickly arriving at a huge shopping mall. He stopped in his tracks and held onto Selena's hand, saying in full seriousness, "Selena, you don't need to collect trash anymore. You can work to kill time if you want. If you don't feel like working, I'll take care of you!"

"What're you talking about? There are so many people watching!" Selena's face turned scarlet immediately as she quickly retracted her hand. To be honest, she had little feelings for Jack. Back then, she was forced into the marriage. It was out of spite that she got herself drunk, resulting in that incident. However, she really could not bear to abort her own child. Moreover, Jack was a filial son and seemed to have a decent personality. It was because of her child that she held on for so long. Now that Jack suddenly held her hand, she felt extremely shy.

"Let's go in and have a look. However, Jack, don't you buy anything for me. You should buy some for your in-laws. They've suffered a lot of hardships for the past five years because of you!" Joan, on the other hand, just smiled at them. She obviously hoped that Jack could gain the recognition of his in-laws.

"For clothes, it's better to bring them over to pick for themselves. If I buy it for them, it might not suit them!" Jack answered after some consideration. They were his in-laws after all. They have suffered hardships all these years because of him, yet he had never treated them properly for even a day. Their dissatisfaction with him was understandable. Very quickly, Jack brought them to the second floor of the shopping mall.

"Jack, I think it's better for us to shop around on the first floor. The clothes on the second floor are mostly branded. There are even international brands. Those are expensive!" Selena whispered to him after looking around.

“Really? Are they that expensive?” Upon hearing that, Joan urged, “Son, let’s go downstairs. Those on the first floor are cheaper. Just buy some for your wife. That’s sufficient. Don’t worry about me. I still have quite a lot of clothes!”

“I don’t need them. Just buy some for your mother instead!” Selena interjected. She was also thinking of saving some money.

“Let’s stop this. Listen to me. We’ll shop here!” One on each hand, Jack pulled both of them and strode right into an exclusive store.

“No no no, this is too expensive...”

Selena retorted, but it was too late. Jack was very persistently strong, dragging them into the store easily. However, right as they entered the store, she immediately kept quiet. After all, she knew not to embarrass Jack in public.

However, unbeknownst to them, their apparels immediately attracted disgusted glares.

Chapter 10

“Are these three people sane? They look so dirty. Look at that woman wearing a street cleaner’s uniform and a straw hat. Good heavens, isn’t this a Gucci store?” A rich woman sneered coldly as she looked over whilst picking her clothes. She was holding onto a Gucci bag.

“I’m sorry, madam. I’ll have them leave immediately!” The beautiful saleswoman beside her immediately responded with a customary smile, then turned around to instruct the other saleswoman, “Go, send them out of here. Don’t let them lower our store’s class!”

The saleswoman quickly strutted over in her high heels and approached Jack’s group of three. “Hello. Are you here to buy clothes? This is a Gucci store. Our products are from overseas and of high quality...”

That saleswoman was an experienced employee. She was sure that when put that way, those poor people would naturally realize that they came to the wrong place and quietly take their leave. However, she had obviously made a mistake this time.

Jack looked around, then stated, "High class is good. I'm looking to buy some classy clothes for my mother and wife. I won't accept anything of lower class!"

"What?!" The saleswoman was stunned. "Sir, are you sure?"

Jack looked at Selena who stood beside him. "My wife is so pretty and graceful. Shouldn't she wear something classy?"

"Of course. It's just that I'm worried you would have issues with the payment later." The saleswoman chuckled. If not for maintaining the store's image, she would have told him off directly. How could these poor blokes afford their goods?

"What issues?" Jack could not be bothered. He immediately pointed at a dress and stated, "Selena, that dress looked decent. I think it'll suit you!"

"It's fine. I don't really like that color. Jack, I think we should leave!" Selena was feeling nervous. Before her marriage, she would frequent stores like this. However, at that moment, she felt extremely restrained.

"You don't like this color? That's quite a good excuse!" Unexpectedly, that rich lady had approached them. She sneered, "Just admit that you can't afford it. Is there a point to keep up with the facade? What's the point of keeping up appearances if you're poor? Only the rich are worthy of keeping up with appearances!"

"Poor? Based on what are you judging our wealth?" Jack was pissed. He did not mind others badmouthing him. However, that was aimed at Selena. It was unacceptable.

Seeing that Jack dared to retort her, she immediately took up the confrontation. “Just about everything. How can a street cleaner and two poorly dressed people afford to buy clothes here? Have a look for yourself. This dress itself is priced at five figures. Can you see it?”

“What! F-f-five figures!” Joan was shocked. She was really taken aback. She knew that it would be expensive, but she thought it would at most be one or two thousand dollars. She never expected it to hit five figures. “Jack, why don’t we forget about it? We can go look elsewhere!” Joan looked at Jack with a frown.

“Ma, don’t you worry about this matter. The clothes here are for the younger folks. I’ll pick some for Selena first. I’ll help you pick some later!” Faced with his mother, Jack’s expression was a lot gentler. “This one. Selena, go give it a try!” Jack picked the one that he liked and passed it to Selena.

“You really want me to try it on?” Selena frowned. Women liked to look beautiful. She naturally wanted to wear this type of clothes as well. However, her current situation was unlike before. She was no longer the pretty director from before, nor the Taylor family’s Eldest Miss. Even if Jack had over two hundred thousand dollars from his reward, that was earned from him risking his life. She did not want to spend Jack’s hard-earned money this way.

“Go try it on. What are you afraid of?!” Jack pushed Selena into the changing room.

“Wait a minute. Look at her covered in dirt. What if she dirtied our clothes? By then I’m afraid we can’t sell them anymore!” The beautiful saleswoman asked angrily as her expression darkened.

“If you continue spouting nonsense, I’ll give you a beating.” Jack shot her a glare. That intimidating aura caused her to cower and took a few steps back. “You’re not letting us try the clothes out before buying? What’s the point of the changing rooms?” Jack retorted coldly, then ushered Selena into the changing room.

Selena looked at Jack. It all seemed like a dream to her. The Jack right then was really very different from before. ‘Is this the same delivery boy from five years ago who willingly marry into my family and enlist for war in Ivan’s place for one million?’ At that moment, Jack seemed very manly and domineering. She smiled, then quickly changed and walked out of the changing room.

“Selena, you’re really beautiful in this dress. Absolutely stunning!” Joan took a look and her eyes brightened. If it’s ten thousand, so be it. We’ll buy this. All these years, my Jack hasn’t bought you anything before. This is something he should have gotten for you. If not because of our lack of money, it won’t matter even if you buy ten of them!”

“It’s really beautiful, but I think it’s a little too expensive!” Selena frowned. Although she was unwilling to part with it, she still suggested, “Why don’t we look around for a little? There are many shops we haven’t checked out yet!”

“Just buy it if it looks good. Money is not a problem!” Meanwhile, Jack passed her another two dresses. “These two look good too. Try it on!”

“Wait a minute. You can’t try this dress!” The beautiful saleswoman quickly took one of the dresses from them. “Sir, this is a limited edition dress. It’s the only dress in the entire country. This dress is really expensive, priced at over a hundred thousand! It’s the most expensive one in our store, so...” Smack!

However, before she could finish her sentence, Jack had given her a slap. “What did I say earlier? Have you forgotten already? I’ve told you that I’d smack you if you continue spouting nonsense!”

“Y-y-you...” The beautiful saleswoman almost had a stroke. What kind of person was that. So uncivilized. He really dared to hit her. The saleswoman looked pitiful. She was at the verge of crying.

“Brat, you’re really daring huh? A poor bloke like you still dare to be this brazen? Now you’ve even hit someone. Poor folks like you shouldn’t be in stores like this! You said you’re rich right? Sure, just you wait. If you can’t afford to pay later, I, Karen, won’t let you leave this store!” Karen was ruthless and chatty. After delivering her speech, she took out her iPhone and made a call. “Old Roger, bring some men to the South Wing on the second floor. I’m being bullied. There’s a poor bloke that’s acting insolently in my face!”

“Jack, what are you doing?” Witnessing that, Selena frowned and said worriedly, “I think we better get going. I’m not trying it on!”

“They’re just looking down on us and spewing nonsense. If I don’t teach them a lesson, they won’t learn!” Having said that, Jack took both dresses. “It’s fine not to try it. Pack this up. I think the size is about right!”

“I better try it on then!” Selena was feeling helpless. Such an expensive dress. It would be a huge loss if they purchased it just to find it being the wrong size.”

Furthermore, looking at Jack’s behavior, the purchase was unavoidable. Before she could finish trying the two dresses, there were several bodyguards in suits standing in front of the door.

Meanwhile, Karen was also standing by the door, sneering at Jack.

“Karen, that’s the poor bloke? Don’t worry. I’m used to dealing with this type of poor and insolent fool. I’ll let him know what cruelty means!” No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 11-15

Chapter 11

“All three dresses suit you well, honey. Do you like it? We’ll get them if you like it!” The two saleswomen no longer dared to look down on Jack. They merely stood there pitifully.

Hearing Jack’s words, Selena blushed. She was still a little unused to the term ‘Honey’. “I still think it’s too expensive!” By then, Selena had already changed back into her clothes. She took a look at the three dresses, then replied with a smile. “It’s the thought that counts. One dress will do, no need for that many!”

“Just admit that you’re poor and drop the act. Don’t even think of leaving the store if you can’t pay up today!” Karen, the rich woman, started sneering at them.

When the saleswomen heard those words, they felt delighted. 'These three poor blokes are acting so insolent even though they're poor. Let's see how you deal with it now that you met a stronger figure.'

However, out of their expectations, Jack passed the three dresses to the saleswoman that he slapped earlier. "Just these three. Pack them up for me!"

"You're really buying? The total is almost two hundred thousand dollars..." The woman asked out of surprise, then finally led the way after a moment, saying, "Sir, this way please!"

Jack followed along and took out a gold card. The numbers on the card were all eights.

"This...is it usable?" the saleswoman frowned, unable to resist from muttering. It was her first time seeing such a card.

"Why do you keep spewing nonsense? It's password-free for payments under ten billion dollars!" Jack gave her an impatient look, then dashingly waved at Selena who was waiting for him.

The saleswoman took a big gulp of air. Somehow, she still felt that this man before him was lying. Even the most powerful black card that she knew of was only limited to password-free transactions under 10 million dollars. Meanwhile, this person was telling her that his card allowed for password-free transactions under 10 billion? If that was not a lie, what was? However, she tried her best to smile and ran the card through the reader. Surprisingly, the transaction was successful instantly!

"Oh my god, he was telling the truth?" The beautiful saleswoman swallowed hard. Even if that was a lie, the card was still capable of password-free transactions for that sum of money. This person's identity was surely extraordinary. Moreover, this type of customer would definitely be considered VIP amongst VIP at the banks.

"Sir, here you go. Please come again!" It was rare for them to meet such a rich customer. The beautiful saleswoman respectfully passed the card back to Jack and bowed slightly, trying to appease him.

"What's wrong? Didn't you just diss us for being poor? You're still asking us to come again?" Jack smiled

coldly as he retrieved his card.

“It’s all a misunderstanding. I didn’t expect you to keep such a low profile! The beautiful saleswoman answered with a smile, then added, “If you’re making similar purchases here every day, I don’t mind getting slapped by you again!” After all, those three dresses gave them quite a good commission, especially the one costing over 100 thousand dollars. Most people could not afford it.

Jack could not be bothered with her. He then approached Selena and Joan. “Let’s go. Ma, we’ll go shop somewhere else and see if there are any that suit you!”

“Are you serious? You really settled the bill?” Karen stood in front of the door waiting to teach Jack a lesson. When she saw the saleswoman escorting Jack out delightfully, she was flabbergasted. Although she did not lack wealth, she would still feel the pain if she spent 200 thousand dollars in one go. Moreover, she had just uttered some mean words.

“A good dog doesn’t block the way! Move aside!” Jack stated coldly as he reached the door and stared at those bodyguards.

“Brat, you’re quite insolent! The leader of the bodyguards was aggravated. He took a step forward and sent a punch right at Jack’s face. However, he was sent flying the very next instant, landing heavily on the floor.

“This...” The rest of the bodyguards were stunned. This brat seemed to be a capable fighter.

“What’re you doing standing there? Go get him! Damn it, how dare he hit my men. That’s just disrespecting me, Karen!” Karen snapped her fingers and barked her orders. Upon witnessing that, she was furious.

Unfortunately, the next moment she was speechless. Her rather capable bodyguards that went through special training were all lying on the floor, unable to even touch his clothes.

“Karen, would you like to try?” Jack stared coldly at Karen, curling his finger invitingly at her.

“It’s all a misunderstanding. brother, I can see that you’re quite the capable fighter. Why don’t you be my bodyguard? I’ll pay you!” Karen smiled awkwardly. If her bodyguards were no match for Jack, what could she, a weak little girl, do? She would probably die from a single kick.

“Be your bodyguard? Ha, you’re overestimating yourself!” To Jack, that offer was a joke. He, the Supreme Warrior, master of the Nine Gods of War, and his countless contributions in the war, falling low enough to be someone’s bodyguard?

“Son, let’s get going!” Joan was scared. It was the first time she witnessed such a scene. However, her own son’s strength was truly amazing. A group like that was not his match.

“Let’s go. Ma, the clothes in that store would suit you...”

“Don’t bother. You’ve already spent so much money. Don’t use up all your rewards!”

“It’s fine Ma, your son wants to buy some clothes for you. Isn’t that the right thing to do?”

...

After a moment, Selena received a call. After answering it, her expression turned extremely ugly.

“What’s wrong, honey?!” Seeing that, Jack asked immediately.

“Did you beat up Ivan Taylor?” Selena’s expression was cold. Before Jack could explain, she reprimanded angrily, “Why do you like to fight so much? Yes, you’re amazing. After being a soldier for a few years, you’re now very powerful, right? You’ll just beat up whoever that offends you, isn’t it?”

“Jack, look at you. That Ivan is someone we can’t afford to offend. He’s very petty. Now that you’ve offended him, we’re not going to live in peace in the future!” Joan sighed. “Ivan is the main reason for Selena being unemployed all these while. Right now, he’s the director of Taylor Group. As long as he sends a word in the market, who would dare to attract trouble by hiring Selena?”

“But he really deserves it. If not because of his identity as a member of the Taylor family and Selena’s cousin, he would be long dead!” Jack turned expressionless, then said, “That bastard. When I came back, I didn’t know you were kicked out of the Taylor family. I met Ivan and he dared to force Kylie to eat buns that he stomped on. How could I tolerate that!?”

“What?!” Hearing that, Selena was shocked. “That bastard. He’s really going overboard. How dare he treat Kylie like that.” Having said that, she looked toward Jack, finally realizing that she had wrongfully blamed him. “I’m sorry. I didn’t know it was for that reason that you beat him up. However, Grandpa is furious at the moment and requested for us to head over. My parents are already rushing over. They asked us to hurry up.”

“What’s there to be scared of? It’s their fault to start with. I’ve not even begun settling the matter of them kicking you guys out of the Taylor family!” Jack harrumphed, then said, “Let’s go!”

Chapter 12

“Settle the matter? How do you plan to settle this? For that matter, I’m at fault too. Furthermore, Master Taylor is still my grandfather. Are you planning to beat him up?” Selena smiled bitterly, then said, “This time, you come with us and just stay quiet in a corner. After so many years, Grandpa’s temper should have improved. Maybe a few good words will stop them from pursuing this matter.”

“Alright, I’ll try my best to follow your instructions and avoid acting. Otherwise, you’ll complain that I’m being too violent!” Jack laughed bitterly. He wanted to see for himself how the people from the Taylor family would treat him without knowing his identity. Furthermore, the reason he came back this time was not to be the Supreme Warrior. He only wished to peacefully accompany his woman and care for his mother, living life comfortably.

Taking a taxi, the group of three quickly arrived at the gates of Taylor Residence.

“That brat is really brazen to actually hit Young Master Taylor. Didn’t he know that Young Master Taylor was extremely petty?”

“That’s right. I’m afraid this won’t end well. He’s just a soldier, a stinking live-in son-in-law. He should consider his own identity!”

They overheard the quiet exchange of the two guards at the gate just as they got out of the car.

However, when the guards noticed their arrival, they immediately kept quiet.

One of them smiled. “Miss Selena, you’re back. We’ll inform the Master and Old Master right away!”

“No need! We’ll go by ourselves!” Selena looked at the gate stoically with complex feelings.

She had numerous wonderful memories of her childhood here. Unexpectedly, after growing up, the Taylor family turned out to be filled with so much political intrigue. To her, the bigger surprise was the fact that she would, one day, be kicked out of this place.

After hesitating for a moment, the trio entered slowly. Just as they reached the gate of the Old Master’s villa, they could hear the voices of discussion coming from within.

“That Jack is too much. Who does he think he is to hit Ivan?!”

“That’s right. He’s just a soldier of a few years. Does he think he’s some big shot now? How can a sparrow transform into a phoenix?!”

“Most importantly, Ivan was suffering from fractured bones. I heard that he was beaten to the point of unconsciousness!” A few relatives of the Taylor family were having a heated discussion, as though Jack was a condemned sinner.

“Yes, that’s right. That brat is in the wrong. I’m so pissed!” Just as Selena was about to enter, Fiona’s voice could be heard. Selena frowned immediately. Her outstretched hand paused in the air.

Right at that moment, Fiona’s voice was heard once more, “You might not know this, but earlier today, he actually slapped Ken Clark, the Clark family’s young master, and caused him to lose three teeth!”

“Young Master Clark? That Young Master Clark that fancies your Selena all this while? He went looking for you?” Old Master Taylor could not help but ask.

“I know, right?” He thought that Jack was surely dead and hoped that Selena would divorce Jack so that he could marry Selena. Moreover, he also mentioned that he does not mind about Kylie’s incident.

“Who could’ve known that Jack would suddenly come back at that time...” Fiona grew more agitated over time. “This time, I’m afraid the Clark family won’t let it go that easily!”

Selena could not bear listening on, pushing straight through the door with Jack and Joan with her. “Ma, I won’t accept Ken’s proposal! He’s a fake gentleman. Do you really think that he would be nice to me after getting married? By that time, I don’t know how much frustration I’ll have to go through!”

“Selena, you’re finally back. If you don’t give me a proper resolution for today’s matter, I won’t let this go!” Upon seeing Jack and Selena’s arrival, Ivan, who had one hand in bandages, stared at them angrily with his eyes wide open.

“Ivan, are you without fault? You had Kylie eat the buns that you threw on the floor and stomped on. Do you think that Jack, as a father, could tolerate that?” Selena’s expression darkened, then looked at Old Master Taylor and said, “Grandpa, Jack can’t be blamed for this matter. Ivan was really going overboard.”

“Ivan, is that the case?” Old Master Taylor was not an unreasonable person. He looked at Ivan and asked slowly.

Ivan immediately retorted, "How is that possible? I was only joking and Jack coincidentally saw it. Who knew he would act without even saying anything! H-h-he even forced me to eat that bun!"

"Ivan Taylor, if you continue to spew nonsense, I'll break your other arm!" Beside her, Jack could no longer bear to watch it. Ivan was clearly lying blatantly. Hearing those words, Ivan took a few steps back. It was obvious that he was scared. However, remembering that they were in Taylor Residence and Jack was just a live-in son-in-law, he probably would not dare do anything with this many witnesses.

With his newfound confidence, he took a step forward. "You guys take a look at how insolent this brat is. He's just a live-in son-in-law, not even a Taylor, yet he dared to utter such words in front of everyone." Ivan turned around and shot a look at Jack.

The words that Jack was about to say were held back. He had already caused Selena to suffer through so many years of hardships. For Selena's sake, he did not wish to complicate matters. Furthermore, he only wanted to enjoy a peaceful life.

"Jack, you're too brazen. If not for the one million dollars we gave you, your mother won't be able to afford the surgery and died! Not only are you ungrateful, but you also repaid kindness with malice and treat our Taylor family this way?" One of the relatives of the Taylor family immediately started their accusations.

"That's right. If it's not for us, would his mother still be around?" Another elder was similarly putting up airs, acting high and mighty.

In their eyes, Jack and Joan were outsiders, penniless people of the lower class. If not for Selena being pregnant with that bastard child, Jack would have nothing to do with their Taylor family.

Right then, one of the girls from the Taylor family in her twenties, Cecilia Taylor, noticed the shopping bag in Joan's hand. "Are my eyes playing tricks on me? That is all Gucci stuff!" Cecilia walked forward and studied Joan, who was still in her cleaner's uniform, closely, then said disdainfully, "Did you rob or steal these?!"

With Cecilia pointing it out, everyone immediately took notice of those shopping bags. They were obviously Gucci. Was that something they could even afford?

“My son bought it for me and Selena. Although we’re poor, we have always been honorable. There’s no way we would resort to stealing or robbing!”

Chapter 13

“Honorable? If you’re not wearing such clothing, I might just believe it!” Cecilia sneered, then added, “There should be a few dresses in there. From the looks of it, some were bought for Selena, right? I’m guessing the total should be some tens of thousand dollars!”

Cecilia commented as she looked through the content. She suddenly saw a dress and took it out of the bag. “It can’t be. T-t-this is a limited edition worldwide! This dress is over a hundred thousand dollars! It’s the newest model from Gucci!”

Hearing those words, several people from the Taylor family had a shocked expression.

It was not that they could not afford that dress, but it was weird that Jack’s group could afford it.

Moreover, it was not some high-end watch or jade pieces, but just a dress. Even those from the Taylor family would think twice before spending hundreds and thousands of dollars.

“Put the dress back. I don’t want your hand dirtying Selena’s dress!” Upon seeing her taking the dress out, Jack’s expression darkened as he issued the warning.

Cecilia was astonished, then proceed to put it back into the bag. However, she soon started smiling. “I know. You must’ve bought fake goods. Tsk...tsk it does seem authentic. I almost believed it.”

The others came to a sudden realization. ‘That’s right. How can they afford international branded items? What a joke. What else could it be if not high-quality imitation?’

“Cecilia, its authenticity has nothing to do with you, does it?” This is my husband’s gift for me. As long as it’s from him, I’ll like it regardless of its authenticity!” Upon hearing the unpleasant words she had said, Selena replied sarcastically, “Unlike some people, without a boyfriend despite their advanced age. Could it be that you’re jealous of me?”

“You...” Cecilia was triggered. Although her appearance was not bad, she indeed had no boyfriend. Selena’s word caused her great discomfort. She then sneered, “I’m jealous of you? That’s rich. Should I be jealous of you being kicked out of the Taylor family like trash? I don’t have a boyfriend because I want to find a rich man. Unlike someone, cheap enough to just marry a delivery boy.”

By that point, Cecilia added more venomous comments. “Moreover, the wedding ceremony was lackluster. There wasn’t even a betrothal gift. What a shame it was for our Taylor family.”

“So what if I’m willing? That’s none of your business. This is my own choice to make!” Selena was fighting back fiercely, almost breaking her ladylike persona.

“Sure, of course. Some people are happy with their degeneracy, what can we do about it?”

Cecilia shrugged. “Well, that kind of hardship is something this lady will never experience.”

“Enough!” Finally, Old Master Taylor roared stoically. The Old Master was quite advanced in age, but his presence silenced the room immediately. He walked up to Jack, checking him out carefully. For some reason, he felt that this young man had undergone a complete transformation. Just him standing there gave off an aura that should not be trifled with. Was he still the same young man that begged him for one million dollars to treat his mother’s disease from five years ago? He thought for a moment, then finally spoke up, “Tell me, how much money should I pay you to leave Selena alone and stop bugging her?”

The Old Master knew full well of Selena’s obsession with the child. Selena’s refusal for a divorce was definitely because of the child. However, he could do it by approaching Jack. Hearing that, Selena frowned and looked at Jack worryingly. After all, with the power of money, it was hard to say. Moreover, despite them being officially married, there were hardly any feelings between them.

Jack was silent. 'Money? Would I care for those things now?' Furthermore, five years ago, if not for saving his mother, he would never beg someone for merely one million dollars. "Old Master, I'm afraid you'll be disappointed. Selena is my woman. For me and my child, she had suffered through five years of hardship. It's impossible for me to leave them!" Jack replied firmly with a smile.

Hearing those words, Selena's heart was filled with warmth. The past five years of waiting was not in vain.

The Old Master quickly took out a check and signed his name, then passed it to Jack. "Our Taylor family does not like you as our live-in son-in-law. Back then, you've promised to fake the marriage with Selena to take Ivan's place on the battlefield. I'm not killing you this time because of your relationship with Selena and Kylie. However, you must leave! Write whatever number you wish! You can cash it in at any bank in Eastfield. Furthermore, I can let the matter of you beating up Ivan slide!" It could be said that from the Old Master's perspective, he had already made a huge compromise.

Upon hearing that, Ivan was furious. He quickly stepped forward and stated, "Grandpa, we can just kill him. He's broken my arm..."

"Shut up!" Who would have thought that Old Master Taylor would turn around to yell at him? "Ivan Taylor, do you think I don't know what you've done in secret? You only know that my health is in decline and rarely leave the house, isn't it? I, Zeus Taylor, might be old, but I'm not blind. Ever since you've been the director, our company's performance has been in decline for the past few years. I'm just too tired to berate you!"

Old Master Taylor then added, "I can't be bothered with you picking on Selena as I was also angry with her giving birth to a child with him. However, Kylie is Selena's daughter. She's only four years old. How dare you feed her with buns that you stomped on. I can't bear to imagine such an incident!"

"Dad, regardless, Jack can't beat Ivan up just because of that, right? Furthermore, these are just empty accusations from Jack. Who knows if he might be lying!?" Theodore Taylor, master of the Taylor family and Ivan's father, interjected as he stepped forward.

"Is that so? Would you dare to let me investigate the matter to see if it really happened?"

Old Master Taylor's words shut Theodore up. He then added, "You play a big part in Ivan's current behavior of mixing around with those questionable women. He's under your care. We're just a third-class aristocratic family. It took us a lot of effort to get us here. Aren't you afraid that our Taylor family might one day be ruined in the hands of your son?"

"Grandpa, how is that possible. I go out for drinks to entertain my clients. It's for my job!"

Ivan laughed awkwardly, then added, "Furthermore, our company's performance is quite good for the past two months. You need to believe in me. This year, we'll be making a huge profit and cover for our losses in the past."

Hearing that, Jack's heart felt a lot better. It would seem that the Old Master kicked Selena out mainly due to his annoyance of Selena marrying a nameless person like him. However, five years have passed. His anger should mostly subside. Furthermore, he was probably keeping tabs on Selena and Kylie's situation. All in all, Old Master Taylor still cared for his granddaughter. "Here, sign it. As for the number, just write whatever you wish! With that, we'll call it even!"

Chapter 14

Old Master Taylor was having mixed feelings. Jack's guess was almost spot on. The Old Master was a person that cared greatly about his reputation. Back then, he had Jack marry into the Taylor family to prevent Ivan from being enlisted. That itself was already something that affected the Taylor family's reputation. He never expected an even greater shame to come later on. Jack was only married to Selena for a day when he got enlisted the very next day. However, Selena became pregnant soon after. He was aware that Selena had gotten drunk that night. He even suspected that it could have been Jack that forced himself on Selena. Never did he expect Selena to claim that it was voluntary. That matter almost gave him a heart attack. That was why, in a fit of rage, he kicked Selena, her parents, and her 14 years old brother out of the Taylor Residence. As for Selena's inability to be employed and the restrictions placed on her, that was the work of Ivan.

"Are you sure I can write any amount?" Jack was surprised for a moment and then asked while snickering.

“Of course! Just fill it!” Seeing how Jack was really moved by money, Old Master Taylor’s heart rejoiced. Selena’s beauty was above others. Furthermore, she was talented in business matters. As long as she divorced Jack, she would have no problem looking for a wealthy partner. In fact, he heard that Young Master Clark was trying to court Selena.

“Of course, the Old Master will keep his words. Fill it in quickly!” said Fiona.

Fiona was extremely excited upon hearing their exchange. She quickly approached the dumbfounded Selena. “Daughter, look. I’ve told you that he will let you down. You wanted to keep the child for him and wait for five years. You suffered five years of hardship, yet he still ended up choosing money? This is a materialistic world!”

Selena stood there in a daze. She felt lost. All those years spent waiting, all those suffering, in the end...

“Jack, you... Are you stupid? Where else can you find such a wonderful wife? Are you really giving up your wife and daughter for money? Selena suffered five years of hardship. All those scorn and ridicule she had to endure! She even had to collect trash and gave up looking for a job!” Joan stepped forward and looked at Jack, her eyes filled with disappointment. “We can’t be heartless!”

“Ma, let him be!” Selena’s eyes were filled with despair, complete despair. The five difficult years she endured came to such a conclusion.

“You see? Selena, all men are hopeless. I’ve told you to abort the child, yet you didn’t listen!” Cecilia then added out of the blue, “Sigh, although I can’t find a boyfriend, it’s still better than you finding an undependable one!”

Selena’s eyes were tearing up. She looked at Jack, feeling hopeless. “Have you decided?”

Jack smiled. “I’ve decided!” Having said that, he started scribbling on the check. He then quickly passed the check back. “I’m done. You told me to fill it up!”

“Of course, I’ll keep my word!” Seeing Jack choosing money, Zeus’ gaze showed a hint of disappointment. At first, he had come to respect Jack a little bit more. He was thinking if Jack were to show some capabilities and treat his granddaughter well, that would also be acceptable. Unfortunately, Jack failed. However, he froze up after he looked at the check. On the check, it was written with a string of numbers, “9999999999999999...” At the end of the string of numbers, it was followed by ellipsis!

“Brat, are you trolling me?” Zeus’ expression darkened, turning extremely scary. Even Theodore, master of the Taylor family, went forward to have a look at the check, exclaiming, “Brat, what’s the meaning of this? You think this is a joke?”

“What’s the matter?” Cecilia was similarly surprised. She hurried over to take a look. “One, two, three, four, five, six, seven...why is it ending with an ellipsis? How much money is this?”

“Haha, Old Master Taylor, you told me to write as I like. Can you afford the figure I filled in?” At that moment, Jack burst out laughing. He approached Selena and held onto her hand, stating in a serious tone, “My wife waited five full years for me, a mere delivery boy. She suffered all those hardships, yet you’re trying to measure it with money? She’s priceless, hence you can’t afford the price I’m asking for!”

“You rascal...” Selena was trapped in between anger and amusement. However, her heart was filled with happiness. Just a second ago, she thought Jack was about to take the money and divorce her, leaving her and her daughter behind. It turns out that he had written countless nines on that check and even added ellipsis in the end.

“Let me see, let me see!” Joan was originally quite angry. Hearing the conversation, she immediately reached for the check. After taking a look, she excitedly passed it to Selena. “Selena, look! This is your status in my son’s heart. You’re priceless!”

“Mom, I know!” Selena blushed. The few years of waiting turned out to be worth it. This man did not let her down.

“How dare you toy with our Taylor family. Jack, you’re courting death. Guards, cripple him, and throw him out of here!” Theodore stepped forward and bellowed in rage.

“Is this a fight? I’m sorry, but I’m very good at that now!” Jack replied after hearing that. He then stated with a smile on his face, “In the past five years, I’m not sure how many mountains will form from the enemies that I’ve killed. There were many experts within their ranks, yet they all died in my hands. There were a few times I almost died, but I managed to survive because I know that someone is waiting for me back home. I can’t die!” When Jack made his statement, he gave off a strong aura. As he stood there, he seemed like a king. “Today, I’ll let those who dare to act against me know what it’s like to make a grave mistake!”

“What did I tell you before coming over?” Surprisingly, Selena’s face turned dark as she reprimanded Jack in a menacing voice. She felt that ever since Jack had been a soldier, he had grown more capable. However, he was just too boastful. Moreover, they were in the Taylor family. He was just a live-in son-in-law. How could he take action against her own family members? Jack finally remembered his promise with Selena and immediately changed to an awkward laugh. “Um, I’m just joking!”

However, the bodyguards outside the door had already rushed in.

“Get out!” Just as the bodyguards were about to act, Old Master Taylor gave a stern order.

The bodyguards exchanged glances, then quickly went out.

“Dad, this brat is toying with us. Can’t you see that?” Theodore was extremely frustrated. However, they could not disobey the Old Master’s orders. Although he was the master of this household and his son was the director of Taylor Group, the Old Master was the one truly in charge. All important matters of the Taylor family had to go through him.

“He’s not toying with us. I did tell him to fill as he wished. It’s just that we can’t afford that price!”

Old Master Taylor laughed bitterly, then spoke, “Jack, this has gone on for five years. My granddaughter had also suffered many hardships. Since you’re both truly in love and Kylie has grown, I’m fine with not forcing you through a divorce!”

Having said that, Old Master Taylor's tone took a sudden change. "However..."

Chapter 15

"This can't be. Grandpa is acknowledging Jack's identity as the son-in-law of the Taylor family?" Upon hearing the Old Master's words, some of the Taylor family members had a shocked expression on their faces.

"Grandpa used to pamper Selena. It'd seem that Grandpa's anger had subsided after all these years. Within Selena's body still flows the blood of our Taylor family, after all." A member of the Taylor family speculated quietly in his mind.

"Grandpa!" Selena pursed her red lips and felt her tears surfacing. She knew her grandfather had been keeping tabs on her in secret. The old man was only unable to lower himself all this while. For Zeus Taylor, his reputation was more important than anything else.

"However?" Jack scowled. He knew that it would not be that simple.

"However, the matter of you injuring Ivan's arm can't be settled just like that!" The old man's tone changed once more as he continued, "You need to pay compensation!"

"That's right. Grandpa's right. My arm is fractured. The doctor said that my arm will take at least one to two months to recover, and that's with the best medicine!" Due to the Old Master's lecture earlier, Ivan had been standing in silence all the while. Now that his grandfather was speaking up for him, he immediately rejoiced.

"How about this: I'll give you one month's time, Jack. One month later is coincidentally my seventieth birthday. If you can come up with ten million dollars in a month, I'll acknowledge that you're the Taylor family's son-in-law! However, if you fail to produce the money, then you'll have to divorce Selena as that would prove that you lack the ability, unworthy of being with Selena! Furthermore, Ivan's hand is rendered in such a state because of you. You need to compensate him with ten million dollars! How's that?" The Old Master stared at Jack and declared authoritatively.

“Grandpa, aren’t you intentionally making it difficult for him? He was just a delivery boy. Now that he’s a soldier for five years and returned from the battlefield, how can he cough up that amount of money in one month!?” Selena was worried when she heard the proposition. What difference was that from chasing Jack away? It was just a different method.

“Old Master, can you lower the amount? That’s too much. He can’t even produce one million dollars, much less ten million dollars!” Joan’s expression was ugly. She did not wish to miss her chance on such a wonderful daughter-in-law.

“No reduction. If he can’t even produce ten million dollars, how can he be worthy of my daughter?” It was Fiona who interjected strongly. She then pushed on, “Hmph! If he can earn ten million, that can be the betrothal gift for my daughter. When the time comes, that money must be passed to me, or I’ll never recognize him as our son-in-law!”

“That won’t work.” Ivan spoke up, “If he can produce ten million dollars, I should be getting it as compensation. I can’t just get hit for nothing, can I?”

“No way. Your treatment won’t total up to ten million!” There was no way Fiona would let this go. She had suffered in poverty for so many years. If she had ten million dollars, she could live her life comfortably.

“The ten million that Grandpa mentioned was for compensation, not a betrothal gift. Can’t you understand?” Ivan laughed happily. His words managed to stump Fiona.

“In one month, right?” Jack contemplated, then stated, “How about this. One month from now, on Grandpa’s seventieth birthday, I’ll pay Ivan ten million dollars for compensation, send another ten million to Mother-in-law as a betrothal gift, and on top of that, send ten million worth of birthday gifts to Grandpa! A grand total of thirty million dollars. If I can’t achieve that, I’ll be willing to divorce Selena!”

“Are you crazy? That much money in one month? You won’t have enough even if you sold yourself!” Joan was scared witless. She guessed that Jack must have been pushed over the limit and started talking

nonsense.

“You can’t be serious, right? Didn’t I tell you not to boast?! Thirty million dollars! It’s not three thousand dollars!” Selena was also reprimanding him anxiously.

“Don’t worry, honey, I really should prove to the Taylors that I’m worthy of marrying you!” Jack moved his hand and caressed Selena’s beautiful cheeks. “I won’t let anything separate me from you and our daughter!”

Selena’s heart was touched. At that moment, she felt confident that Jack was not lying to her. “Alright, I’ll believe you!” In the end, Selena nodded. “Of course. Jack, if you managed to do so, the Taylor family will not only acknowledge your identity! We can also have your in-laws, Selena, and your entire family—including your mother—to move into Taylor Residence!”

The old man contemplated for a moment, then said, “By then, Selena can also resume her work in Taylor Group!”

“Alright. You have a deal!” Jack agreed immediately.

“Brat, you’re really good at boasting. I’d like to see how embarrassing it’ll be for you should you fail to produce the money by then!” Ivan took two steps forward and glared at Jack.

Jack took out a stick of cigarette and casually lit it. He took a deep breath. “And what if I managed to do it? If I fail, I’ll roll my way out of the gates of Taylor Residence. Should I succeed, however, you’ll have to kneel and apologize to Selena. How does that sound? After all, in the past five years, you’ve done quite the harm!”

“Haha, sure. Listen up, everyone. This is a promise between me and this brat! Since he wants to embarrass himself, then I can only oblige. When the time comes, we’ll all bear witness to how he rolls from this gate all the way out. Remember, you’re not walking out, but roll!” Ivan laughed out loud. ‘It’s already a miracle for this trash to come back alive. Producing thirty million dollars in a month? Dream

on!’

“Brother Ivan, don’t worry, we’re not deaf. We heard it clearly. We’ll be your witnesses!” Cecilia crossed her hands over her chest and gave Jack a condescending look. “It’s been five years. After finally coming back and managed to buy some clothes for your mother and wife, you chose to get some imitation items. Your clothings scream of poverty. I refuse to believe that you can produce thirty million dollars!”

“Haha, you’re right!”

“I think he knows that he’s unworthy of Selena and decided to go all out with his bluff. When the time comes, he can only shamefully roll out of Taylor Residence!”

“Look at him. If he can earn thirty million dollars in one month, then can’t I easily set a hundred million as a small goal?”

Quite a number of the Taylor family members started laughing.

There were quite a lot of people present. They were mostly working in the Taylor Group, under the employ of Ivan Taylor. They naturally intended to curry favor for him.

“Jack, you’ve said it yourself. I’m waiting for your ten million as a betrothal gift. When the time comes, don’t blame me for being merciless!” Fiona reminded him after contemplating it.

“Haha, Fiona, have you gone crazy thinking of money? Do you really think that he can come up with that amount for his betrothal gift?” Ivan smiled.

“Just ten million dollars as a betrothal gift will allow me to marry Selena? I’ll pay ten million dollars. Let her marry me! If that’s insufficient, I’m fine with fifty million dollars! What to do when I’m not lacking money?” Right at that moment, a man of stout physique walked in as he laughed loudly, followed by a group of bodyguards.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 16-20

Chapter 16

“Young Master Wilson, what are you doing here?” Ivan greeted the Wilson family’s young master the moment he noticed him.

“What did you say earlier, Young Master Wilson? Fifty million? You’re willing to offer a fifty million dollars reward?” Overwhelmed with emotions, Fiona’s eyes lit up. “Is your word good?” she sputtered.

One should know that the Wilsons and the Clarks were both second-class aristocratic families. Simply put, they were significantly wealthier than their Taylor family.

“Of course, Auntie. Do we look like people who’d go back on their word? I’m still a member of the Wilson family, my word is still good!” Young Master Wilson chuckled as he spoke, yet he was simultaneously admiring the seemingly perfect appearance of Selena. He could not hold himself back as he gulped. Young Master Wilson was extremely fat; so much so that he resembled a pig. Not only was he extremely gluttonous, but he was very interested in women as well. He was instantly charmed back when he first laid eyes on Selena and her ethereal beauty. When he learned of her marriage to a takeout delivery guy in addition to being pregnant at a later time, he was all too furious. Even so, Selena’s beauty did not fade even after she gave birth; she looked even more beautiful and mature. Her body was practically glowing with femininity. He would do everything to keep her all to himself. Moreover, Selena was known as the most beautiful maiden in the Eastfield. Marrying her would be an incredible and proud feat in front of other men.

“Splendid. I’ll hold you to your word!” Fiona clapped her hands, chuckling as she approached Selena. “Did you hear that, Selena?” she spoke. “That person, Jack, mentioned ten million. This Young Master Wilson fellow instead offered to pay fifty million dollars, and he had always been interested in you. He’s not too bad himself, the way I see it. You should give it some thought. All you need to do is nod and we’ll make that brat, Jack, leave immediately!”

The instant Selena heard that statement, she nearly passed out from agitation. She could barely hold her composure just by looking at Young Master Wilson’s appearance. Although that Young Master Clark fellow was not a pleasant man, he was handsome at least. That man from the Wilson family looked fat

and his ears were too huge. She felt greasy just by staring at him.

She then argued, “Ma, are you marrying off your daughter or selling her? So, you’ll just hand off your daughter to whoever is offering the highest price? Why don’t you just auction me off then?” Selena furiously added, “Even Grandpa agreed to let me marry Jack, and the agreement was even set earlier. How can you simply act on your own and change it as you like?”

“Selena, that’s not what I meant. That Jack fellow is a takeout delivery boy, and he’s only been a soldier for a few years now. You don’t expect him to amount to anything, do you now?” As she finished, Fiona pointed her disdainful glare at Jack before she continued, “I wasn’t looking down on him. I wonder: can he make thirty million dollars in a month? Hehe! Just you wait. He won’t be able to make that much money after a month. Till then, I’ll have him exiled from our family!”

“Jack White? Good lord, this person is Jack White? Kylie’s useless father has returned?” Stunned Young Master Wilson carefully scrutinized Jack. “Hehe. It seems like his appearance is the only thing that’s going for him,” he spoke. “He’s dressed so plainly. How is he worthy of Miss Selena?”

“You sure spout a lot of nonsense!” Jack glared at him icily. He condescendingly spoke, “This is the Taylor family home. What are you, an outsider, doing here? If you have no purpose here, then beat it!”

“Haha! Such strong words. Don’t you know just how major of a family us Wilsons are?” Young Master Wilson cackled out loud then added, “Am I really here without a purpose? I’m here to discuss the matters of our collaboration with Young Master Taylor. We happen to have something that we’d like to work together with the Taylors!”

The moment Old Master Taylor heard that statement, he was naturally pleased as he said, “All that come by are guests. Let’s sit here, Young Master Wilson!”

“There’s no need, Old Master Taylor. I’ll be talking to Young Master Wilson!” Young Master Wilson then looked at Ivan before he spoke with a very peculiar expression, “Young Master Ivan, what’s wrong with your hand? Did you fight with someone? Who dares fight with you?”

Ivan's expression grew incredibly bitter as he eyeballed Jack. Hoarsely, he replied, "A mad man, nothing else. I was merely joking with his daughter Kylie, and he came over to beat me up without saying a word."

Micheal Wilson was stunned after hearing that statement. He spoke after looking at Jack, "Oh, so it was that useless object, then. Truly unexpected that he was bold enough to hit you. He's got guts, I'll give him that!"

"It's fine. We had a bet. He said that after a month on my grandfather's seventieth birthday, he'll give me ten million dollars as reimbursement! In addition to offering Selena's family a ten million dollars reward, he'll also give my grandfather a gift worth ten million dollars! Should he fail, he'll exile himself out of the Taylor family and divorce Selena! He'll roll out the front door from this spot!" Ivan cackled out loud and said, "That's right, Young Master Wilson. You have to come by during our grandfather's seventieth birthday. You have to see how this little brat will roll out of the front door!"

"Alright. The distance from here to the front door is quite far. I'm guessing he won't be able to roll out of it very quickly!" Young Master Wilson cackled and took a look at Selena. He then said, "Don't you worry, Selena. All I have is time, and I'm willing to wait for you. You'll have your freedom once again after this little brat is exiled from the Taylor family after a month, and that means you'll be single. When the day comes, don't turn me away!"

"Alright, let's go, Young Master Wilson. We still have important matters to discuss!" Ivan had a smug look on his face. He was beaten rather badly by Jack today, but if he could get this brat exiled from the family, it would be the best thing that could ever happen! He believed that Jack was nothing but a ruffian. He was merely saying that to preserve his pride. He was actually interested to see how much this brat would humiliate himself when the time arrived. Ivan soon left with Young Master Wilson!

"Alright, you guys can leave as well. Don't disappoint me in a month from now!" Old Master Taylor realized it was getting late outside as he waved his hand impatiently. Although Jack's behavior was a little out of his expectations, the thought of his granddaughter getting married to a poor man—which humiliated him—dissatisfied him so.

At this very moment, in an extremely lavish mansion, the wealthiest man in all of the Eastfield, James Drake was looking at a middle-aged man. After some thought, he said, "The man who returned with the

God of War, Lana is called Jack White. I'm guessing that their relationship isn't as simple as it seems on the surface. Look into it for me! I want an answer as soon as possible!"

The man in front of him was James' most efficient assistant. He had served the Drake family incredibly well.

After he listened to that statement, he frowned and said, "Master, I think there's no need for that. Even if that man has some ties to the God of War, Lana, he doesn't possess any useful value to us, right?"

As he said that, he smiled and said, "Why don't we strike at the very root of our problem, to butter up the great God of War. That's the most important thing to us!"

Chapter 17

As James listened to what his staff had to say, he could not hold back his bitter chuckle. "The Gods of Wars are way above our status, and they're not easy to butter up," he stated. "Not to mention, this is a female God of War. We don't even know what she likes and dislikes!"

He paused when that point was brought up. He continued, "I'm afraid all of the major powerhouses wanted nothing more than to sweet-talk to the God of War upon her return. Fortunately, we went through so much to learn of her flight today, and it seems the other powerhouses knew absolutely nothing."

The middle-aged man in front of him nodded his head and said, "The gift we sent for the God of War Lana, did she accept it?"

"She accepted the hospitality we arranged for her. It's a different story for the money, though. She was quite disinterested with it!"

James chuckled and said, "Lana seems to dislike it when people try to flatter her. Not to mention, we have no idea how exactly we can cajole her."

The middle-aged man remained silent for a brief moment. All of a sudden, his eyes lit up as he spoke, "Master, so what you meant was, since that Jack fellow shares quite the unique relationship with Lana, all we need to do is butter up Jack. This, in turn, would be an indirect way of flattering the God of War. Thus, if the God of War only grants our family her blessing in the future, wouldn't this make our business more stable?"

James nodded slowly and replied, "Yes. That man was able to sit in the same plane with Lana when they returned. All we need to do is help Jack, since that would mean we're also wooing Lana!"

"Bravo, Master!"

The nickname for the middle-aged man was called Spectre, and he happened to be one of the Three Major Guardians in the Drake family. With a smile etched on his face, he then spoke, "Hmm. This God of War happens to be a female and, from how I see it, she isn't young at all..."

James frowned after hearing that statement. "Spectre," he started, "you're not thinking of making a move on her to make her your woman now, are you? You best keep that thought to yourself. Should you offend her and the God of War gets furious, not only is our Drake family, but the entire Eastfield will end up as a river of blood in a single night!"

Spectre let out a bitter laugh as he said, "Master, how would I dare to even have that thought? Besides, I am not the kind of person to toy with a woman's feelings just for my future benefit now, right? A man who uses a woman to further their reputation is someone I would be the first person to look down on!"

Upon making that statement, Spectre explained, "What I mean is, Jack isn't Lana's man now, is he? Perhaps there's also a possibility of them sharing an intimate relationship! Besides, they've known each other for a very long period in the fields of war. And they see each other very often..."

"That's very unlikely. Judging by how they both behaved, they seemed very cold to one another. They have quite the cold face on them; could that even spark any romance?" James chuckled and, after a brief pause, continued, "No matter what, just look into them. It doesn't matter if he's only a staff to

Lana. We still have to butter them up; this will surely strengthen our bond with the God of War!”

“No problem. Recently, numerous military veterans are coming out of retirement in Eastfield. There are also many high-ranking and well-achieved soldiers among them. Go visit them and have someone look into that Jack fellow.”

Spectre nodded as he beamed, “Now that Master has mentioned it, I’m starting to get interested in that man! I hope he won’t disappoint me!”

“Good! I’ll await your good news!” James spoke with a chuckle.

...

At this very moment, in a random room within the Clark family home, Ken was seething with rage. He stared furiously at Dan in front of him and barked, “What’s the meaning of this, Dan? Why didn’t you teach that brat, Jack, a lesson? Not only that, but you had someone carry me away. Do you have any idea how humiliating that was to me?”

As he spoke, he pointed at his mouth and said, “Look, my teeth have been completely smashed. Goddamnit! When have I, Ken Clark, ever endured such humiliation!”

“Young Master, that man isn’t as simple as you imagine. I’m no match for him!” Dan frowned and spoke in an all too serious tone, “He murdered the Black Dragon. I was told by witnesses present in that scene; they didn’t even notice him so much as move a muscle before he dropped dead!”

“That has to be impossible, right? Don’t we have surveillance cameras? Why can’t we get clear footage of how he made his move?” After Ken heard what he said, his expression was in disbelief.

“I’ve already looked into it and have even slowed down the footage, all to no avail!” Dan let out a bitter laugh and added, “Still, we know that he was directly pierced in-between his eyes. We found an

extremely thin silver needle on top of a pillar a good distance away. Moreover, the silver needle completely pierced through the pillar. There are only one to two millimeters exposed out of the pillar!”

Young Master Ken took a deep breath and said, “You’re joking, right? You’re telling me that after a person’s head was pierced, it also pierced through a stone pillar, and all that’s left was a tiny bit exposed on the outside? Such an incredible speed and insane strength!”

“This finger of mine, well, I lost a bet to him, and I chopped it off as a result! This person is way too terrifying! Young Master, don’t ever cross this Jack White, do you understand?” Dan raised his hand and said, “Arm-wrestling with him made me feel like I’m a mere ant compared to him with the strength he had.”

“That’s got to be impossible, isn’t it? There’s someone that powerful in this world? You’re already incredibly powerful; how much more powerful can he be compared to you?” Ken was completely stunned. If that was the case, would it be that getting Selena was a mere dream?

“Yeah, this was also the first time for me to have ever met someone this terrifyingly powerful!” Dan lamented as he left swiftly.

Young Master Ken sat on the floor after Dan had left him be. The moment he thought about the beautiful Selena, his heart felt incredibly dissatisfied. “Goddamnit. I refuse to believe it. This is the Eastfield, and we Clarks happened to be a second-class aristocratic family. Is it that difficult for us to get one woman?” Ken clenched his fist while a glimmer of determination flashed across his eyes. He said, “Selena Taylor, I’ll do everything I can to get you to lay in my bed obediently!”

...

At this moment, Jack, Selena and the others had all left the Taylor family home.

“Jack, those things were words you spouted earlier on your own. I don’t care about anything else. If you don’t give me ten million dollars on the old man’s seventieth birthday, it won’t be easy for you to be our

family's son-in-law now!" When they had just got out the door, Fiona could not hold herself back from furiously saying, "You've already seen our Selena is up for grabs as usual. Even Young Master Wilson had said it himself; all Selena needs to do is nod and fifty million dollars won't be a problem for him."

"Don't you worry, Mom. Anything I say, I'll pull it off with ease." Jack let out a bitter laugh as he looked at the elderly couple. He then added, "That's right, Mom and Dad. You've both been living frugally in these five years, so let me bring you guys out to shop for a few sets of new clothes now. It's a little something from me, as a son-in-law!"

"Forget it. I'm afraid that the clothes you'd buy would shame me in public. It's better for you to not buy me anything than a good knock-off. I want to wear branded clothes!"

Fiona noticed the clothes Selena had in her hands. She immediately snatched it before she could react and walked to a nearby lake not far from there and immediately tossed it in. "You can't undersell yourself this way, my girl," she barked.

"You happen to be the lady of the Taylor family. We have to maintain our pride, even though we're poor. Such imitations aren't something worthwhile to wear!"

Chapter 18

Selena initially thought her mother would help her carry the clothes in her hands when she snatched and tossed them into the lake. It was already too late by the time she came to her senses. Those three sets of clothes that cost nearly two hundred thousand had been audaciously tossed into the lake beside her.

"What on Earth are you doing, Ma? Those were authentic! Who told you they were fake?" Selena was so agitated that she stomped. Alarmed, she rushed over as her eyes grew red and she seemed like she was about to cry. It was the first time Jack had gotten her clothes. After all the hardships she had endured for the five years they were married, she finally had a taste of luxury. This meant her endurance for the past five years was not for nothing!

"Authentic? How are those even genuine? And if they truly were, can he even afford them?" The

skeptical Fiona crossed her arms at her chest. She was unconvinced that Jack had that much money to have bought Gucci branded clothes for her daughter.

“Dear mother-in-law, those were truly genuine. We bought them at the Gucci store. They can’t possibly be fake now, right?” Jack said.

Joan, who stood at the side, finally burst, “How could you toss clothes that cost nearly two hundred thousand into the lake?!”

“No, I must retrieve them!” The already frantic Selena was prepared to dive into the lake and retrieve the clothes. Fortunately, the lake was clear; she could start wearing the clothes after a good wash once she retrieved them. Jack watched Selena’s every move and felt his heart wrench. Selena was only twenty. She even contributed greatly to her family’s company at a young age— five years ago—being the lady from the Taylor family. Selena, back then, was adorned with branded clothes and had enjoyed being treated as a reputable lady. Yet, here she was, in an attempt to dive into the lake merely to retrieve those few pieces of clothing.

Jack took two steps forward and immediately grabbed onto Selena. “Forget about them, my dear,” he called out, “they’re only three pieces of clothing anyway. I’ll bring you out and buy you another one!”

Selena was unmoved. “No,” she protested. “These clothes are so expensive, and the money you earned has risked your life. Not to mention, this is the first time you bought me clothes. I have to fish them up, and they can still be worn, too!”

Jack chuckled as he heard that statement. He felt utterly touched; he thought that having a wife like her would make him a happy man for the rest of his life. As he released her hand, Jack dove into the lake and picked up the clothes. He was drenched head to toe, but the words Selena spoke to him warmed his heart.

“No way. They’re actually authentic?” As the shocked Fiona saw the event unfolding before her, she looked toward Joan and sputtered, “Where’d your son get the money from?”

Joan let out a bitter laugh before she responded, "It's all thanks to the five years my son has served as a soldier. When he was discharged this time and upon his return, he was given some prize money from being discharged. He used that money to buy us clothes, didn't he? Although the money he earned had placed him at great risk, he willingly spent it all for Selena!"

"I..." Fiona was completely speechless. She did not expect those clothes were genuine Gucci clothes.

"You're hopeless. It doesn't matter if it's authentic or not; you can't just toss it into the lake! It came from Jack's thoughtfulness!" Even the usually silent Andrew could not help but glare at Fiona.

Jack was already out of the lake at this moment. He looked at Andrew before saying, "Let's head back now, father-in-law. Your leg was smashed by accident. Don't you worry, though, I can help you heal!"

"That's impossible, right?" Andrew's heart skipped a beat when he heard that statement. He frowned after that and said, "When we went to get it checked in a well-known hospital, the doctor mentioned that it'll still limp even after it's treated. This is a nerve problem, and the bones underneath are all progressively necrotic. Even as I'm walking now, I feel numb!"

"What nonsense are you spouting? You, a useless piece of trash, know medical treatment? I'll never believe you!" Fiona, on the other hand, rolled her eyes at Jack and barked, "Jack, don't you dare think that we'd accept you just by giving the prize money this time and buying a few clothes for my daughter. I'm telling you now: it's not happening!"

Fiona then fell into a momentary silence before she continued her tirade, "We've endured so much hardship all these years. How is this small amount of money enough for us? Besides, based on reason, you're required to give the ten million prize money to us during the old man's seventieth birthday. Otherwise, don't even think for a second that we'll acknowledge you!"

"What on Earth are you saying, Mom?! He's still Kylie's father, and the child can't live without a father. Besides, he's a responsible man!" Selena stared at Fiona furiously. "It doesn't matter if you guys acknowledge him or not," she added, "as in my heart, he's my—Selena Taylor's—man. Even if you have him exiled from the Taylor family, I'll never marry Young Master Clark or Young Master Wilson. From how I see it, those people aren't even a fraction of a man Jack is."

“You—” Fiona was livid. She pointed at Selena and said, “How did I give birth to a daughter like you? You’re being disrespectful now, do you understand? Are you here to pressure your mother to death? Are you only satisfied when I’m dead after being backed into a corner?”

“I—that’s not what I meant! You can’t always force me, you know?” Selena could only hold back her frustrations when she noticed her mother lamenting on the side. “Fine. Stop talking about it, Ma. This whole ordeal is my fault, I admit it!”

“I—Jack White—am a man, and I’ll never go back on any word I’ve said. I’ll give you ten million when the time comes, and I’ll never let Selena be parted from me!” Jack then let out a dry laugh and said, “Alright, it’s getting late now. Let’s all go back to take a shower, change into fresh clothes, and we’ll all eat out tonight.”

Fiona’s eyes lit up at the mere mention of eating out. They had lived meagerly for the last five years and Selena was restricted to find work. She could only rely on the money she made from picking up trash for her family’s living. Aside from Selena, all the expenses they had were paid with Andrew’s earnings. His monthly pay was not much, but he forked everything out every month to allow Selena to buy groceries. They lived as they saved. Hence, Fiona actually felt quite happy when she heard that.

Just like before, however, her expression turned cold as she scoffed, “Are you sure about eating out? I’m telling you now, I won’t accept places that are considered low-class. If you want me to come along, it should only be a lavishly high-class restaurant!”

“Of course. As long you’re willing, Mom. Anywhere you pick is fine!” Jack chuckled then hailed two cabs. “Let’s go,” he spoke. “We’ll head back first since Kylie and Jenny are both waiting for us. I think the little rascal should be famished by now. Have Jenny be at our home next time. She can help us take care of Kylie and clean up the house.”

Fiona rolled her eyes at Jack. She said, “Don’t call me Mom. If I don’t see the ten million prize money, I’ll never acknowledge you as our family’s son in law. Hmph!”

Selena, on the other hand, was frowning. “Jenny is quite good, but the wages our Taylor family offers aren’t too low either,” she mumbled. “It’d cost six to seven thousand dollars per month. We can’t afford that!”

“Don’t you worry, I’ll take care of the money. It’s almost the start of the school’s semester, too, so we should enroll Kylie to a school soon!” Jack chuckled as he made that statement.

“Yeah!” Selena nodded.

It did not take too long for them to reach home with their cabs.

...

At this very moment, one of the three guardians in the Drake family—Spectre—rushed frantically to look for James after receiving a phone call.

Chapter 19

“Master, Master! I’ve made several phone calls, and I finally found something about the whole situation with Jack. It’s very peculiar!” Spectre called out to James as he rushed in frantically.

“Peculiar?” James was somewhat startled when he heard what Spectre had to say. He never thought he would describe Jack as ‘peculiar’.

“Have a look. This is the information I got from people I tasked in the military to look into Jack White. There’s only his name, his ID number, and his past job as a takeout delivery boy. After that, he became the son-in-law of the Taylor family. He got enlisted on the second day of his marriage, and what happens after that is something we can’t find. Suddenly, five years later, he returned to the Eastfield!”

Spectre frowned and said, “Isn’t such a casefile peculiar? Not only was information during his enlistment

a mystery, but the department he was enlisted in was unknown as well. All we could find was that his mother's name is Joan Xavier, currently working as a cleaner in Eastfield. We have nothing on his father!"

"Can't find anything about his father, and his situation during his enlistment is also a complete mystery..." There was a frown on his face, but James soon came to a deduction. "Judging from the looks of it, there's a huge possibility that someone had intentionally erased all records about him!" he articulated. "Or perhaps, this is just his surface-level casefile and that his identity isn't that simple. There might be a very confidential and secretive casefile on him!"

"Master, if that's the case, this man's identity is certainly not that simple. Otherwise, the government wouldn't blatantly hide his casefile and stop anyone from digging into him!"

The astounded Spectre remarked, "To have power for movement of this scale... If he wasn't a God of War, he'd be close to one!"

"Yes, yes, yes! It has to be that!" Stirred, James nodded immediately and ordered, "Go, continue your search on Jack's current situation in Eastfield. Isn't he living with the Taylor family? Look into how Jack is doing while he lives in the Taylor family home, and look into what he's doing right now!"

"Not a problem, Master. I, too, feel that this man isn't as plain as we think!"

Spectre nodded immediately as he said, "It seems that there's not just one God of War that has returned to Eastfield this time. There are two!"

"This is such a good opportunity for us, the Drake family!" James chuckled humorously. Racking his brain for a moment, he then spoke, "Look into where he currently is right now. I can't get in contact with him right now. Besides, he's seen me during the day, and he might suspect that we're investigating him if he sees me again at night. Still, we can arrange for Titus or Tanner to get in contact with him!"

Spectre tittered. "Excellent idea. I'll have it arranged right now! As for his situation in the Taylor family's

home, we can slowly investigate and probe progressively. I believe we can find out his current whereabouts in less than an hour!”

...

It was only after Jack returned to his home did he recall something. Frowning, he asked, “My dear, where will I be sleeping tonight?”

Selena blushed after hearing that. That would actually be a problem. Both of them were married; they still had a daughter. It was during their wedding night, when Selena was drunk, that they did the deed. Selena remained silent for a really long while as she had no idea how to answer him.

Upon noticing the distraught look on Selena’s face, Jack mirthfully spoke, “Don’t worry, I’ll sleep in any empty rooms!”

Selena frowned and said, “There are only so many rooms in total. Your mom has one, and so does my mom. Although it’s rare for my brother to return, he has one as well. Kylie and I are sharing a room. Four rooms and not a single one remains. Fortunately, Jenny is renting a house outside. Otherwise, she herself won’t have room to sleep in!”

Jack was embarrassed as he replied with a bitter laugh, “The storeroom is also fine. As long as it provides cover from wind and rain. When we were on a mission out there back then, we survived for a month’s time on a deserted island.”

“Deserted island!” After Selena heard that, she frowned and said, “It had to be hard for you, right?”

“No. I’d always be thinking that I have such a beautiful wife waiting at home for me should we be victorious. With that thought in mind, I’d be motivated!” Jack looked at Selena who was right in front of him; the hellish torture he endured for five years was worth every second. Five years of absolute hell had honed him into a sharp blade. This sharp blade, however, had to hide its edges to protect his woman and family.

Selena felt utterly gratified after she heard what Jack had to say. She was a rebel against her family from the very beginning, but she soon realized she was unable to part with the child inside her belly. Now, Jack made her feel that she could depend on him.

“You... I think you should just share a room with us!” Selena finally pouted her lips as her blush seared.

Jack coughed. “Well then, dear wife, can I cuddle with you while I sleep?” Jack became giddy as the woman before him was absolutely gentle and kind. Selena’s watery eyes could charm anyone.

“No. Allowing you to share a room with me is pretty good on its own. The child was an accident back then and, besides, I can’t fully accept you now. Not yet!” Selena turned around then said, “You can only sleep on the floor with a carpet. Wait...wait till our relationship grows much deeper in the future, and I’ll think about then! Hurry up and take a shower. Kylie’s delighted when she heard that we’ll have a feast tonight.”

“Alright, I’ll get to it right now!”

Unexpectedly, just as Jack had just gone to take a shower, Fiona came over to Selena’s room. She then coldly asked, “There aren’t any extra rooms, so where will Jack be sleeping tonight?”

“On the floor. Am I not placing the carpet down now?” Selena let out a bitter laugh as she took the covers out.

Upon noticing that, Fiona’s expression recovered slightly. She then said, “Daughter, you can’t ever allow that bastard child to touch you now, do you understand? If it wasn’t for him, we won’t be living in such a hellish state. Besides, as long as I’ve not seen the promised ten million, you can’t sell yourself short. Do you understand? Men will never appreciate anything they can easily get!”

“You’re being too judgemental now, don’t you think, Ma? From how I see it, as long as Jack treats us well and if we work hard together, everything would be better!” Selena pondered for a moment then

added, "Besides, he's not too bad. He treats me well, he treats Kylie well, and he's also very respectful toward his mother!"

"What's good without money? Can he treat you well, feed our family with good food, dress better, and live better? Only by giving us money to spend is he treating you well, not by saying a couple of kind statements!"

After Fiona finished her harangue, she got out immediately after slamming the door. "I don't care," she sneered. "Since he mentioned that he'll be treating us to dinner tonight, I want to make it extremely difficult for him! I want him to know, he can't afford to treat us!"

Chapter 20

"Yay, yay! We can go for a meal now!" Kylie was dressed in a beautiful mini princess dress while she pranced delightfully in the courtyard.

"Madam, I won't be joining you guys. I still have some matters to attend to, so I'll take my leave now." Jenny smiled at Selena.

"A date with your boyfriend again? Oh, you. Hurry up and go!" Selena spoke with a compassionate smile.

Joan had already finished her shower at that moment. She changed into the new clothes Jack had bought for her; she looked younger at a short glance. Although she was already in her forties, she looked younger and more elegant. Joan looked effortlessly beautiful, and she had her natural elegance as well. Although she was usually dressed in her cleaner's uniform to work, she still emanated a personal grace that only belonged to her and no one else. It was also this reason that Jack's father fell in love with her back then. Unfortunately...

"Ma, you look pretty in that dress!" Selena smiled as she took a look at Joan.

"Oh, you. Stop flattering me; I'm already old!" Joan chuckled while she spoke.

Fiona who was sitting on the side could not hold herself back from mumbling while she witnessed that scene. "Am I her birth mother, or is she?" she mumbled. "Goddamnit..."

Andrew, on the other hand, was smoking. He had a frown on his face as he seemed to be lost in thoughts. After a moment, he nudged Fiona next to him with his elbow and said, "Say, Jack said he can heal my leg. Do you think it's possible?"

Fiona immediately said, "You actually believe the nonsense he sputtered? Don't you know anything about him? He's only a soldier, so is he capable of healing your leg? I think it's more likely that he'll break your leg!"

Andrew was speechless. Embarrassed, he found himself unable to argue.

Fiona then looked at the direction of the washroom and spoke impatiently. "How is that brat taking such a long shower? I'm already famished!"

Andrew took a look at the time and said, "It's only been five minutes, though. You were taking a shower for half an hour earlier..."

Although this courtyard seemed old and disheveled, it was in a strategic location. After Jack was done with his shower, a few of them began to discuss where to eat while they strolled.

"Hmm, not this one. It's too cheap. It's not enough!"

"This one is even worse. A public buffet? Meaningless!"

As she strolled, Fiona intentionally looked at Jack with disdainful eyes while she goaded him, "Jack, you suggested treating us to a meal. I want to eat in a better restaurant. Have you brought enough money?"

Don't bail on us after we're done with our meal!"

"Don't worry. Today's my first time treating everyone to a meal, so we should all be happy. My dear mother-in-law, just pick as you please, and eat to your heart's content!" Jack then turned to Kylie, who was in Selena's arms. He then reached out and said, "Kylie, let Daddy carry you for a bit!"

The flustered Kylie looked toward Selena with her pair of huge sharp eyes, seemingly asking for her approval. "Kylie, he's your father. Hurry and call out to your father. Let him carry you."

Selena felt her emotions stirred. She lamented at the fact that a child could not be without a father. On the day her child was born, she started her long journey of waiting. She was internally terrified. She was afraid of Jack dying on the battlefield.

"Da—Daddy!" Kylie reached out and called out to her father with her child-like voice.

As a Supreme Warrior, Jack's heart wrenched the second he heard her innocent voice. It was the first time she called him 'daddy'. In the five years of constant battle, he felt like he had slowly become downright merciless and cold-blooded. However, he never expected his heart would soften after just hearing his daughter calling him daddy in such a sweet way.

"Let's eat here. This place seems alright!" Just as Jack was carrying Kylie, Fiona noticed an impressive looking restaurant. Although it was not in some fancy hotel, the style of this restaurant looked impressive and rather classy. The main point was that the restaurant must have a very expensive rent to have been built at that spot. In other words, the prices of the food must be expensive as well.

"Hmm... You've got good taste, dear mother-in-law. This place has a romantic feel to it, and the interior design isn't bad. Music is also playing in the background. Truly, only people who know how to enjoy life would choose such a place!" After Jack took a look at it, he nodded in agreement as well.

"Well, isn't it obvious? Just look at who picked it!" Fiona's expression seemed slightly prideful before her eyes swiftly shifted, rolling at Jack. "Don't even think for a second that praising me would make me

forgive everything you've done, brat," she sneered. "I'm telling you, that ten million shouldn't be short by..."

...

Upon noticing Jack and the group of people approaching, a beautiful waitress walked up to them and started catering to them. "Please come inside, all of you! Our services here aren't any less than the ones in those fancy hotels. Besides, our customers are rather reputable people..."

"Give me a table close to the windows!" Jack nodded and the rest took their seats. The beautiful waitress came over with a menu.

"I'll order!" Fiona immediately snatched the menu. After taking a look, she pointed at the lobster and said, "This ain't bad. One would cost more than a thousand, right? How many people do we have here? Let's have one for each!"

"Ma, why are you ordering that much? It's such a waste, don't you think so?" Selena was completely speechless. Judging from the looks of things, her mother was actually going to make it difficult for Jack.

"How could you say that, my daughter? He said it himself; he can make 30 million in a month. That would mean he'll make 1 million dollars in a day, right? For a person like that, could he not afford this meal?" Fiona raised her voice intentionally. In an instant, the few tables around them started looking their way.

"No way...he's that capable? 1 million a day? Is he boasting? 30 million a month. Does that mean he'd make 300 million in a year?"

A woman gasped audibly. "That's ludicrous. Truly can't judge from his looks, though. That man seems to be dressed normally, doesn't he?"

“Is this real? Why come here if he makes thirty million dollars a month? Why don’t they head to a five-star restaurant then?”

“Do you think it’s cheap here? It really isn’t. It’s easy to spend tens of thousands here.”

More people were starting to look at Jack. Some were envious, while some were merely interested to see who on earth this person was to have such power.

Fiona grinned when she noticed the attention. Would he be completely humiliated if he was unable to pay later? Until then, he would not have the pride left to marry her daughter!

“Must you be so loud when ordering food, Ma?”

Selena was speechless. It genuinely seemed like Fiona wished to humiliate Jack in public.

“Pardon me, I’m a loud talker!” Fiona laughed as she immediately crossed her arms. “You wouldn’t mind now, would you, Jack? After all, you know our Selena is named the most beautiful maiden in all of Eastfield! Her status is priceless. If you can’t even afford a single meal, do you think you’re worthy of her? If you can’t even fork out the money for this meal, I suggest you leave her sooner rather than later for her own good! Only Young Master Wilson and Young Master Clark can provide my daughter with happiness!” She stared directly at Jack as she spoke, and she continued word by word, “And you’ll only drag my daughter down. Drag our family down. I advise you: Don’t. Humiliate. Yourself.”

After Jack heard that statement, he chuckled coldly as he seemed unfazed. He said, “Dear mother-in-law, how can you speak so much in one meal? Don’t you worry; I’m the only one that can secure Selena’s happiness. I’ll still be able to pay everything, even if you ordered the entire menu tonight!”

“Haha! You speak heavy words. Well, don’t mind if I do!” The corners of Fiona’s mouth twitched as she held in a full belly of disdain. She wanted him to know what ruthless meant tonight!
No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 21-25

Chapter 21

In the restaurant, Fiona Lewis was so angry that her complexion turned red and her chest heaved. She would not be mocked and looked down on in these past five years if it was not because of Jack White. Jack White was the reason for everything. Everything happened because of this useless son-in-law. Instantly, the atmosphere became very tense!

Fiona thought of Young Master Clark and Young Master Wilson, who were young masters of second-class aristocratic families and were richer than the Taylor family. When she thought about the 50 million that Young Master Wilson was willing to pay as a betrothal gift, all she wished was to immediately chase away this veteran brat in front of her. She hated how this brat had taken advantage of her drunk daughter at the night of the wedding and would never forgive him. With so many eyes on him, she wanted to see how Jack would conclude the matter.

It was rumored that veterans who came back from war would get a generous amount of bonus, but it would generally be around 200 to 300 thousand. Those who got more were the ones who had a meritorious service or the ones who had an official position. It was clear that Jack was not that kind of person.

Furthermore, he had probably already spent most of his money in order to make her daughter happy and had not much left.

If she ordered any more, Jack would have to sell himself to this place.

“This, give me two of this. This one too, it looks good.”

Fiona suddenly saw the beverage section at the bottom. In the beverage section, there were bottles of wine priced below 100, which was suitable for normal consumers. There were also beverages and alcohol that were suitable for rich people, and the most expensive one was 20 thousand dollars.

“This red wine, 20 thousand dollars per bottle, get me 20 bottles of it. After all, Selena’s father is very troubled for these few years and has gotten fonder of drinking wine!”

Subsequently, Fiona smiled, faced Jack, and asked, "20 bottles?"

Joan Xavier inhaled sharply after she heard Fiona and was worried that Jack did not have enough money with him. She spoke lightly with a frown, "Fiona, it's 400 thousand dollars for 20 bottles. On top of that, not many of us here like drinking. How can we finish so much wine? Also, it's such a big amount of money. We are one family, why would you do this?" Joan spoke in a pleading tone.

"Who are your family? That is merely what you think and I don't think so!" Fiona had a cold smile on her face.

"Lady, you can order more alcohol later, if you feel that it's insufficient. However, if you place an order now, it cannot be refunded even if you did not open the bottle. We can, however, reserve it for your next visit..." The pretty waitress could also see that this mother-in-law was obviously being deliberately arrogant toward her son-in-law that she disliked, so the waitress spoke up to remind her.

"No problem, we can take it away even if we cannot finish it! He has to be rich to be my son-in-law!" Fiona handed the menu back to the waitress. Only then did she look at Joan with a fake smile, "Joan, you should not take me as your son's mother-in-law right now. It's said that marriage requires both people to come from the same social status. We are not from the same class. On top of that, he said that he would give me a 10 million dollar betrothal gift. It's better that we discuss our relationship after your son pays the 10 million betrothal gift!" Fiona continued saying.

"Mum, aren't you going overboard for doing this? It's such a big sum, do you really want Jack to get into trouble?" Selena Taylor was extremely angry. She had no idea that her mother would become so harsh and ridicule.

"He allowed me to order as I please, how am I acting overboard? That's funny. If you can't afford to treat us to a meal, why did you agree to it? Is it really so hard to acknowledge that you are poor and inadequate?" Fiona asked, as if she was not embarrassed that people around them were watching them as a joke.

“Selena, it’s fine. She’s your mother and also my mother. It’s fine if she wants to eat better food! If we cannot finish it, we can take away and eat it at home. As long as there’s no wastage!” Jack smiled calmly and even spoke up for Fiona.

“In my opinion, this is a wastage.” Selena twitched her mouth and could not help but started mumbling.

After a while, the big meal started. The delicious dishes were served and placed in front of Jack and the others.

“Eat more, Kylie!” Looking at the little one swallowing saliva by the table, Jack smiled as he served her dishes.

Selena looked at how cozy the scene was but had a frown on her face. She thought, could Jack White have achieved something during his five years in the war zone? When others come back, they would normally receive 200 to 300 thousand as a bonus. Jack, who had stayed there for five years, might have 400 to 500 thousand. Even if he only had a small achievement, he might have one million dollars worth of reward.

If this was the case, buying clothes and other things today cost him around 200 thousand, Jack might still have 800 thousand with him. All the dishes on the table together with the red wine were estimated to be around 500 thousand.

‘Jack should have enough money,’ she thought.

However, the money was exchanged with Jack’s life in extreme difficulty. She felt reluctant that the money was ‘eaten’ in one meal. Of course, she felt a little comfort in her heart because Jack was willing to invest everything for her. It seemed that she managed to find a good man out of her impulsive move.

“Darling, what are you thinking about? Start eating!” Jack smiled, picked up a piece of prawn, and placed it in Selena’s bowl.

“Hmm, let’s eat!” Selena looked at Kylie, who was eating happily. A sweet smile appeared on her face.

However, what they were not aware of was that a security guard walked out immediately when he saw Selena and Jack. He headed to the street outside and made a call to Young Master Wilson, who was drinking alcohol.

As Young Master Wilson ended the call, Ivan Taylor, who was by his side immediately asked, “Oh Young Master. Wilson, what’s the matter? Somebody actually contacted you so late at night!”

“That rubbish son-in-law that married into the wife’s family, actually brought my goddess, Selena, to have dinner in the high-end restaurant owned by my family. It seems that this young man has returned from the army and got some money. He ordered 20 bottles of red wine that costs 20 thousand dollars each!”

The fatty bit the chicken drumstick in his hand ruthlessly and said again, “That motherf*cker, I’m f*cking mad. I’m so much richer than the useless veteran. I’m the young master of the Wilson family and I’d take over the Wilson family’s estates. Your cousin was...by that guy, and they even have a child. I just don’t understand no matter how much I think about it.”

“How much red wine? It seems that the young man had some luck and some small achievements in the past five years. If not, how would he have the money to pay for the bill, otherwise?”

Ivan frowned, drank a mouthful of red wine, and his eyes lit up. “Young Master Wilson, I actually have an idea. How do you feel if Selena comes over to you obediently tonight?”

When Wilson heard this, his small eyes suddenly widened and he said in excitement, “What’s the idea? As long as you can make her come to me obediently, I’ll have a lot to offer you!”

“Haha, don’t worry. It’ll definitely work. Young Master Wilson, you just wait for my cousin’s body tonight!” Ivan Taylor smiled evilly, his face had a cunning expression.

Chapter 22

“Oh my, I am so full. It’s so delicious. I haven’t eaten good food like this for such a long time!”

Fiona ate to her heart’s content. She had suffered a lot for these past five years. It was all because of that bastard, Jack White. He did not only cause her daughter to be driven out of the Taylor family, even both of them old folks suffered together.

It had been five years, she had not eaten luxury meals like this for five years! She did not care if Jack had the money to pay the bill. After all, the person who would suffer from the embarrassment was not her. After all, nobody asked Jack to act rich and offer to pay.

“Wow, I’m so jealous! I estimate that this table’s bill must be around 200 thousand! That is the most expensive red wine available here!”

Most of the people at the tables around them had not left, quite a number of people looked at the delicious dishes on the table and were extremely envious.

“It really is a lot. Especially the 20 bottles of red wine that they only drank two bottles of. Oh my, they ordered so much. They really are rich!” One of the men lamented.

“Wait, look at that man. Does he look like a person who earns a million a day? He dresses so ordinarily. Does he really have the money to pay the bill? Do they plan to eat a free meal?”

On the other hand, one of the women doubted Jack’s ability to pay the bill.

“Has everybody finished eating? I’ll get the bill if everyone’s done!” Jack smiled and was prepared to pay the bill.

“Go, go, we are done. Waitress, how much is everything? Please pack these wines, we would like to take

them to go!" Fiona waved to the waitress. She wanted to see if Jack could manage to come up with so much money.

What they did not anticipate was that the waitress did not come over, a manager walked over with a smile instead. He passed the bill to Jack, "Sir, can you please go over there and pay the bill? Thank you for your visit!"

Jack looked at this man's smile and felt a little weird. Why did his smile look insidious? He lowered his head to look at the bill in his hand. He immediately frowned, "I'm sorry, but I don't think that I will pay such a bill tonight!"

The customers at the nearby tables were stunned. This person asked his mother-in-law to order whatever she wanted and was unable to pay the bill?

"F*ck me, these people are really here for a free meal!"

"How can they be so shameless? They acted as if they were very rich just now and even said that they earn 30 million every month. A man who earns 30 million a month can't even pay a 400 thousand bill?"

A few people started chatting. Some of the people even looked at Jack with some feeling of dislike in their eyes.

"This person is so daring. Can he afford to offend the person who has the ability to open such a high-end restaurant? Is he looking for trouble?"

Some of the people were waiting to watch a good show.

Although Selena felt a little sorry about spending the money, but, there was nothing she could do. She had stood up and was prepared to leave after Jack paid the bill. She had no idea that there would be such a scene. She was frightened and directly sat back on the chair, a little stunned. Did Jack really not

have the money? If he did not have money, where did his previous confidence come from?

“Sir, I’m afraid that you can’t leave here if you don’t pay the bill at our place!” that manager said and laughed as he looked at Jack.

Chapter 23

“Great, Jack White. Weren’t you very proud and said that you can pay the bill? Weren’t you the one who asked me to order whatever I want? You’re finally admitting that you have no money, right? Since you don’t have any money, why do you need to boast more than your abilities in order to impress us? Selena, look at this. Is this person really worthy of you marrying?”

Fiona was extremely angry at that moment. She pulled Andrew Taylor and said, “Go go go, let’s leave. Leave him here and see how he would settle this matter. Serves him right even if he gets killed. Why act rich when he does not have money?”

“Jack, you have really let us down!” Andrew was also extremely angry. “Just tell the truth if you don’t have money. We wouldn’t have been so embarrassed. You say that you have money when you don’t and want to treat us to a meal. How can we hand our daughter to such a person like you?”

“Jack, what’s going on? Is it true that you don’t have the money?” Selena took a deep exhale, looked at Jack and asked.

Jack smiled bitterly, passed the bill to Selena and said, “It’s not because I don’t have money, it’s because there’s really no way to pay such a bill and I won’t pay it!”

Selena looked at it with doubt written all over her face. After she looked, her facial expression suddenly darkened. Looking at the manager, she said, “Mister, what’s going on? We only spent around four hundred thousand, why is it over four million on the bill?”

“No way?” Fiona snatched the bill over. She looked at it in detail and then looked at the manager in front of them. “What’s wrong with this place? This is robbery! Isn’t this wine twenty thousand per bottle?”

Why is it billed as two hundred thousand per bottle? Did you make a mistake and added an additional zero?"

"I'm sorry. This is the correct price. It so happens that these twenty bottles of wine were transported over through airfreight so all the alcohol today has increased in price! You ordered twenty bottles and that is four million. Together with the pricing of the dishes, it is four million and eighty thousand. Isn't that right?"

That manager laughed and said again, "I'm afraid that you cannot act dishonestly today even if you want to! You have to pay for the bill!"

"You... This is a scam! Your shop is cheating. It is stated twenty thousand for every bottle on the menu!" Selena was extremely angry. She just realized that she and the others have misunderstood Jack. It was not because of Jack not wanting to pay the bill, it was true that he should not pay such a bill.

"Yes, your shop is a total scam! A table of dishes like this would never cost four million plus!" Both Fiona and Andrew were also very angry as they had never met with such a case before.

It was no wonder why Jack did not have the money to pay the bill. How could he pay such an expensive bill?

"It seems like you can't pay the bill, right?" The manager clapped his hands and about twenty people rushed out from the back of the restaurant in a sudden. All of them looked fierce.

Fiona, who was originally arguing with them, was frightened and lost her previous grandeur. She immediately said with a smile, "Hey...hey, handsome man, you must have remembered wrongly. We only made the order because we saw the price on the menu and it was indeed twenty thousand per bottle . If you don't believe it, you can ask the waitress over there!"

"Come over, bring the menu and let them have a look!"

The manager waved his hand at the pretty waitress, the waitress quickly walked over with a menu and handed it to Fiona.

“Have a look, have a look. Isn’t it twenty thousand here?”

Fiona held the menu, and he immediately pointed at the price and said. “This lady, please look carefully. How many zeros are on it? It’s five zeros, not four. This is two hundred thousand per bottle!” the fat manager smiled coldly as he said this.

Fiona counted carefully as her face darkened. “Why, why is it five zeros? This is really two hundred thousand per bottle?”

Chapter 24

“Let me have a look, let me have a look...” Andrew also took the menu and looked at it cautiously. His face darkened after he finished looking at it. “I only saw four zeros just now. Why is it five zeros now?”

“Haha, do you guys have the blurred vision of an old person? It has always been five zeros, you guys must have seen wrongly!”

The fat manager said with a smile, “No matter what, you have to pay since you made the order!”

Fiona’s eyes gleamed and spoke again after thinking about it, “This is none of our business. It’s Jack White, he was the one treating us to dinner. The rest of us can leave, right? You can just go after him!” After she finished speaking, she signaled Selena and the others to leave together. As for Jack? He asked for this.

This was more than four million and it was totally understandable that Jack could not afford to pay it. Even if it was not more than four million, it was possible that Jack did not even have the money to pay around 400 thousand.

"I'm sorry. I'm afraid that all of you cannot leave here temporarily!" The manager waved his hand and a few of the men moved forward to surround them in a circle.

"Jack, I blame all of this on you. Why did you treat us to a meal when there's no need to? You even acted generous. Well, isn't this just great? It's such a big amount, what should we do now? Are you trying to kill us all?" When she realized that they could not leave, Fiona looked at Jack in a flustered and exasperated way.

"Mother, what are you saying? It should be your fault as you were the one who ordered the most expensive wine. All of those were ordered on your request!" Selena also felt helpless and had no idea what to do at that moment.

"If Jack hadn't let me order as I please, would I order it? Besides, who knew that he was so poor!" Fiona pouted but actually felt guilty inside. In this case, all of them were surrounded and the other party did not allow everyone, including her, to leave. What should they do now? That was more than four million and it was not a small amount!

After Selena thought about, she smiled at the manager, "Mister, let's see. We did order 20 bottles but we only drank two bottles. How about this, we pay the money for these two bottles and we return the remaining 18 bottles. After all, we haven't opened it and you can still sell it, right? I believe that my husband can still come up with 480 thousand!"

"Yes, they only drank two bottles, just take the money for the two bottles!" A few of the onlookers could not stand it anymore. It was obvious that the people of this restaurant did that on purpose. They, too, saw the menu and the most expensive wine was only 20 thousand per bottle.

"What does it have to do with you guys?" The fat manager turned around and stared at the other party before turning around and said to Selena, "Young lady, the situation here is you must pay after you made the order. I believe that our waitress had told you this. You can leave it with us here or take away if you cannot finish. However, you have to pay the bill once you make the order!"

"What's the difference between you doing this and robbing?" Jack pulled Selena back and said coldly, "If only one of us saw it wrongly then it must be giddiness, but, can so many of us be giddy at the same

time? In my opinion, the latest menu that you showed us must have been newly made? I'm sorry but I am still saying the same thing, I'm not paying this bill today! I will not pay you even if it's 480 thousand!"

"Young man, I see that you refuse to be convinced unless you are faced with the grim reality, right?" The manager laughed coldly and few of the men immediately moved forward and surrounded them. On the other hand, the manager spoke to the other guests in the restaurant, "Everyone, you may leave. The meal is on the house today. We have people causing us trouble here, we need to settle it!"

When the other guests heard him, they were so frightened that they ran out one after another. It was as if they were afraid that it would affect them too.

"What do you want to do? You want to rob us? We are from the Taylor family!" Selena was really frightened when she saw this situation and she shouted out loudly.

Chapter 25

After all, the Taylor family still had some influence. Perhaps using the Taylor family's name would work.

As soon as the manager heard this, he immediately waved his hand to order everyone stop and said with a smile, "From the Taylor family? You must be Selena Taylor. If that is the case, you may go beg our boss and see if this issue can be solved!"

"Who is your boss?" Jack immediately frowned when he heard this and he was a little suspicious in his heart. Looking at this situation, it seemed that the other party knew that Selena was here and this was them deliberately causing trouble to Jack and the others.

"Young man, you have no right to know who our boss is!" That fat manager laughed again before saying again, "Miss Taylor, our boss is inside. You should go talk to him. I believe he might let today's issue go for you!"

"Oh... Okay!" Selena frowned and could only force herself to agree.

There were so many people on his side, while she, except Jack who had served the military, only had old and weak folks. She did not want this matter to escalate. What would happen to Kylie if they got into a fight? What should they do about her parents and Jack's mother?

"I'll go with you!" Jack was a little worried and said immediately.

"I'm sorry but my boss did not say that he would meet you, hence, you cannot go in. Besides, we heard about you. You are just a son-in-law who married into the wife's family. You can't even be considered as one of the Taylor's family. As an outsider, you don't qualify speaking with our boss!" The restaurant's manager laughed coldly.

"Really? Let's see if you can stop me then!" Jack's face darkened and a scary aura of killing oozed out of his body. It caused people to feel like the surrounding temperature had suddenly dropped a few degrees.

Selena was frightened when she saw what was happening. She was afraid that Jack would cause any trouble so she immediately turned around and said to Jack, "What do you want to do following me? You just need to wait for me here, I will come out in a short while!"

"But, I am worried that you will be in danger..." Jack frowned.

"Nothing will happen, what could be dangerous? I will go and ask their boss to see if we can return these 18 bottles that we did not drink. After all, I am Zeus Taylor's granddaughter. They won't dare to act recklessly!"

Selena smiled bitterly and said to Jack again, "You just need to wait for me here."

"Alright, I'll only give you five minutes. If I don't see you coming out after five minutes, I'll barge in!" Jack saw Selena's begging look in her eyes and could only nod. He did not want Selena to worry for him anymore.

Furthermore, he did not want to injure anyone with Kylie around. It would not be good if it was seen by Kylie and caused the child to be frightened.

“Ok!” Selena nodded before walking inside with the fat man.

They walked deeper into the restaurant and went up to the second floor before coming in front of a private room’s door.

“Our boss is waiting for you inside. Don’t have to be afraid, I’m sure you know our boss. Go in and have a chat with him and the four million bill today might be waived!” The manager smiled and stood in front of the door to keep watch.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 26-30

Chapter 26

Standing in front of the private room’s door, Selena Taylor became a little hesitant. She had a feeling that this matter was staged. She saw the menu, the most expensive red wine was 20 thousand per bottle, how did it become 200 thousand? On top of that, the person in this private room was a familiar person. This made her even more hesitant. If the other party was a familiar person, why did they approach in such a way? However, if she did not enter the room, what would happen to Kylie if they all cannot leave the place?

Jack was in the army for a few years and seemed energetic enough to fight. It was not a problem for him to take down two or three people. However, the other party had a lot of people, a dozen of them. They did not seem to be normal gangsters you see on the street. No matter how good Jack was, it was difficult to fight being on the disadvantaged side with less people. According to Jack’s temper, it would be even troublesome if he really started fighting with the other party.

With all the pressure, Selena really regretted deeply in her heart. She really should not have come out for dinner, or she should not have come to this kind of place. By spending a few hundred to eat at some small home-cooked restaurant on the street would have been a good idea too. With no other way, she could only exhale heavily, pushed the door open, and walked inside.

After she entered, her face darkened because she discovered that the person who sat in this private room waiting for her, was Young Master Wilson, Michael Wilson.

“Young Master Wilson, you’re the boss of this restaurant! I didn’t expect that!” Selena smiled indifferently and closed the door. “You knew that I was having dinner downstairs so you put on a show just to see me? I don’t like making jokes like this!”

Michael stood up and walked toward her. “Selena, you have always ignored me. Would you come meet me if it wasn’t for that?” He smiled and continued, “What? Are you surprised? Is this unexpected? The Wilson family owns many businesses. This restaurant is just one of them. If you like it, you will be the lady boss of this place after marrying me in the future. You can come here at any time to eat and drink for free. How good is that! If that’s not possible, you can be my woman in secret!”

While speaking, Michael stretched his hands out to touch Selena’s chin.

Selena stepped two steps backward, dodged to the side to avoid him. She said with a cold expression, “Michael Wilson, you can stop dreaming. I don’t like you at all. Besides, don’t think that I’m clueless, you have had fun with quite a few women outside, just because you come from a rich family. Do you think that I will like you?”

Wilson was not happy about it and his face sank as Selena pointed out so clearly. “Selena, I have liked you for so many years and you really would not give me a chance?” After he spoke, Michael walked to a stool and sat down on it before saying, “Yes, yes, yes, I’m a playboy and I have no control over my diet so I gained weight. However, I really like you! I swear that after you marry me, I will not look for those women again!” Michael spoke while looking at Selena’s voluptuous chest and swallowed his saliva hard. “Don’t worry, Selena. You’re incomparable to those women. I will honour my words!”

“Michael, there’s a saying, it’s difficult to change one’s habit! Your lust has become a habit. Do you think that you can change this type of thing by just saying you want to change? Besides, it has nothing to do with me. I don’t like you at all!”

Selena really did not expect that the person waiting for her tonight would be Michael. Although Michael had been pursuing her constantly before this, he had never used such means. He sent flowers or something else in his previous attempts.

Chapter 27

However, Selena had never responded to him let alone given him chances. Who would have thought that this person would use cheat in order to see her for once this time.

“Okay, I’ve said what I should say. My parents are still waiting for me downstairs! That wine should still be billed as 20 thousand per bottle and the total should be four hundred and eighty thousand. We will take away the remaining eighteen bottles that we have not opened!”

Selena said her last words, turned around, opened the door, and prepared to leave.

“Wait!”

Just as she was about to open the door, Michael stood up. “Selena, do you think that the useless brat will have enough money to pay for a four hundred and eighty thousand bill?”

“I believe that he will be able to come up with the money. Although he is not as rich as you, but, at least he will not lie to me!” Selena said coldly.

“Selena, I’m sorry. You thought that I’m joking just to see you?” Michael had already become flustered and red, and his eyes looked fierce. “This time, if you don’t pay four million and eighty thousand, don’t think about leaving!”

“You...” Selena had never imagined that Michael, who was always weak, would say such a thing. She turned around and looked at him, her face was filled with the color of disbelief.

“Selena, I don’t have the patience to wait. I already have a crush on you for five years, and you have not given me any chance! Tonight, if you don’t pay for the bill, your husband will have to die here. Oh yes, your parents and your daughter are also downstairs, right?”

“Although I can spare them in the name of Taylor family, however, beating them up should be fine, right? After all, the Taylor family will not dare to offend the Wilson family because you’re just a third-class aristocratic family!” Michael smiled coldly paced toward Selena. “Selena, I have no choice. I wanted to win you with my sincerity, but you did not give me a chance, so I can only resort to this!”

“Michael, you bastard. I really have had the wrong idea about you. Before today, I thought, apart from being lustful, you’re not a bad person after all. I even thought that we could be friends! I have never looked down on you because of your body size... I can’t believe you’re this malicious!” Selena’s eyes were bloodshot and she stared straight at the other person.

“Selena, you should not talk to me with this attitude, do you know that?” Michael smiled coldly again. “Now, you guys are the ones that spent that much money in my restaurant and you guys want to eat for free. It’s four million and eighty thousand, do you think that I’ll allow you all to leave if you don’t pay?”

Selena frowned even more. At the beginning, she thought Michael was just joking with her, that he deliberately asked her to come upstairs to just meet. She had no idea that Michael Wilson was really digging a hole for her!

“Spit it out, what do you really want? I believe that you’re not the kind of person who needs that money, right?” Selena was silent for a few seconds before saying.

Michael stepped two steps forward and held Selena’s waist in one swift move, “You’re smart, you have answered it correctly!”

Chapter 28

Smelling the delicate fragrance from Selena’s body, Micheal felt excited. He wanted so badly to immediately push Selena on the floor.

Selena smelled Michael, who was filled with the smell of alcohol and felt a wave of disgust. She immediately pushed the other party away hard, "Michael, I am telling you this, don't overdo it!"

After Michael was pushed away, he still felt unsatisfied. After all these years, he had longed for this woman, Selena, for too long. It was a pity that he hadn't even touched her hand once. Just a second before, he actually grabbed this woman's waist. This made him felt like he was in a dream and he really did not want to wake up.

"Am I too much?" Wilson smiled and spread his hands, "Of course, after all, you are the woman that I like and I also respect you very much. So, you just need to pay the four million and eighty thousand to me for the meal and I will immediately let you go. However, if you can't come up with the money, then you really can't blame me for being too much!"

"I..." Selena's facial expression immediately became extremely hard to look at. She had a dark expression on her face and said helplessly, "I... We don't have money!"

"No money?" Michael smiled coldly, "Since you don't have the money, then use your man's life to pay the debt. By that time, your daughter would no longer have a father and your parents would be implicated. Sigh, my subordinated should not be trifled with!"

Seeing that Selena has a terrible look on her face, Michael still continued, "However, Selena, I really like you so much. How about this, I don't want to make it difficult for you. As long as you accompany me out for a coffee tonight, chat together and then go for a movie, we can just forget this!"

"Just, drink coffee with you? Then watch a movie?" Selena bit her sexy red lips, frowned and she was a little worried in her heart. Although this Michael used to respect her very much, but, the matter tonight also made her understand that this guy was not so easy to deal with.

"If you want to do something more, that is also possible!" Michael smiled and then said again, "Actually, my thoughts are really simple. I have been pursuing you for so long and you have never promised me once to go on a date with me. I am really disappointed in my heart! I just want to go on a date with you

once and feel the taste of love. You are not willing to agree to such a simple request?”

“But... But it’s so late now!” Selena was a little hesitant. If Michael only wanted a cup of coffee with her and he can waive this four million plus and allow them to leave safely, that would be great. Although she also felt that this Michael might not have such a simple idea, she had no other way now.

“What do you think? Selena, don’t worry, I really like you. Just have a cup of coffee with me and today’s bill would be waived. You don’t have to pay a penny, how about that?”

Seeing that Selena seemed to be moved, Michael was secretly delighted. This Ivan Taylor was really good, threatening Selena with this method was really effective. After all, Selena loved her daughter very much and was also a very filial woman. Threatening her with her parents and daughter would naturally succeed. The most important thing would be that he held the waist of Selena Taylor, the previously high and mighty girl, who would not even allow him to touch her once, just now. He was still nostalgic about the slender waist.

“How about another day? It’s past seven in the evening now!” Selena thought about it and finally said with a frown.

“How would that work? Choosing a day is not better than doing it now. I can’t let your parents go home another day, right?” Michael immediately straightened his face and then said, “How about this, if you are afraid that your husband will know. You can go home with them first then find an excuse to sneak out. Would that work? When you are ready to come out, give me a call a few minutes in advance and I will drive over to pick you up?”

“Well, I hope that you mean what you say. It’s still okay to have a cup of coffee together. AS for a movie, I’m afraid that it would be too late, so forget it!”

Chapter 29

A wry smile spread across Selena’s face. Although she felt helpless, she still nodded her head. It was because she knew very well that Jack would not have 4 million dollars. Jack, who worked as a soldier for several years, had become aggressive after constantly going to war. It would be disadvantageous if a

fight broke out.

“Don’t worry. I’m Young Master Wilson, the Wilson family’s only Young Master who inherited the family business. When have I ever gone back on my words?” Michael spoke assuringly, immediately patting his chest.

Soon after, Selena opened the door and walked out. On the other side, Michael came to the door too. He spoke to the plump restaurant manager, “Ms. Selena is my friend and also an old acquaintance of mine. Forget the 4 million dollars. For my friend’s sake, it’s on me. Give it to them for free!”

“Then, those 18 bottles of red wine...” After thinking for a moment, the manager reminded him of it.

“Of course let them take them. You charged them for 20 bottles anyways, so it’s only natural for them to take the rest away if they’ve ordered it and couldn’t finish!” Michael immediately broke into a grin. Besides, the cost of the wine was only around 100 thousand dollars. Saying that it was 200 thousand per bottle was a trap set up to trick Selena.

“In that case, thank you very much, Young Master Wilson!” Selena smiled, then followed the manager and walked downstairs to the second floor.

“Why is she not back yet? Did something happen to her?” Joan, who was waiting downstairs, could not help but worry.

“It shouldn’t be possible. Although we were chased out, my daughter is still part of the Taylor family. I’m sure that the boss wouldn’t dare to cut her down? Judging by the way he spoke, it seemed like they knew each other before!” Fiona frowned before she comforted her.

“It’s been five minutes. I’ll go inside and have a look!” Jack looked at the time. Five minutes passed. Worried that Selena might be in danger, he immediately walked inside.

“Kid, you’re not allowed to go to the second floor without our boss’...” One man stepped forward and tried to stop Jack.

Bang! Unfortunately, Jack landed a kick on his chest the next second. Instantly, he was sent flying away. Bang! The man flew and crashed into a table, causing it to collapse. Blood spurted out from the man’s mouth. His complexion instantly turned white.

“Oh, this is unexpected. I wanted to come here for a meal but instead of serving guests, you guys are fighting behind closed doors!” Right at that moment, a bell-like voice sounded from across the room. Accompanied by a few bodyguards, a young, beautiful, and energetic lady walked inside.

The man stood up from the ground. He was about to send his men to fight against Jack but stopped immediately after laying eyes on the woman. “Drake-Second Miss Drake, why are you here?”

Chapter 30

The girl looked young and energetic. She donned a sexy miniskirt with a few braids flowing down her back. A tiny pair of dimples appeared on her cheeks as she pursed her lips slightly. Her pair of large and beautiful eyes appeared quite stunning. A girl that oozed such a youthful aura like her would definitely catch one’s attention.

“So this is the Drake family’s second daughter? You’re really a stunning little beauty. If you already look so pretty at such a young age, what will you become in two years’ time when you grow older?” Two men who were standing at the side could not help but gossip about her.

“Get out of the way!” Jack could not even be bothered by the Drake family’s second daughter as he roared at the people in front of him.

“Handsome guy, what’s the matter?”

Tanya Drake looked at Jack and was slightly taken aback. It seemed like this was the Jack guy whom her father had mentioned. She took another look at Jack and wondered what was so remarkable about him.

She did not understand why her father wanted her and her brother to keep in touch and integrate themselves in his life. Yet, she did not have any other choice. She could only obey her father's words. She believed that this person must be extraordinary if her father had said so.

"Wait a minute, Tanya. You're James Drake's daughter, the richest person in the Eastfield?" Fiona looked at the girl in front of her carefully and asked in surprise before Jack could even answer.

No wonder the girl gave off a noble presence. Moreover, fear spread across the thugs' faces as soon as they saw her. It was obvious that the girl was no ordinary person.

"Yes, my name is Tanya Drake!" Tanya nodded her head and asked, "What's the matter? It seems like this restaurant is nicely decorated and exudes a pleasant atmosphere. I was about to have my dinner here. Why are you guys fighting?"

"Oh, Tanya, this is what happened. We were here for dinner..." Fiona started complaining right away. "Aren't these people just evil? The wine originally cost 20 thousand dollars per bottle but they changed it to 200 thousand dollars. They now want us to pay 4,080,000 dollars or they won't let us go! My daughter is still inside debating with the boss. Jack was worried sick so he started a fight with these people!"

Upon hearing the story, a tinge of joy sparked in Tanya's heart. How lucky was she as this was a great opportunity for her to make friends with Jack. Her brother could not come over as he was busy today and she happened to be nearby. After receiving her father's call, she came over.

She did not expect to come across such an opportunity.

"Well, that's way too much. This is definitely an unscrupulous shop!" Immediately, Tanya said angrily, "Don't pay them. Why would someone pay such a shop?!"

"Who is that swearing and cursing out here?!" Right at that moment, the restaurant manager and Selena walked down from the second floor.

After hearing Tanya's words, the manager scolded, "How dare you come and create trouble here? Do you have a death wish? Do you think you can leave without paying?" However, right after he finished speaking, he came eye to eye with Tanya who was standing there.

The manager gulped and said, "Tanya Drake, what brings you here?"

"Hah, you're a wild one, aren't you? Motherf*cker, I'll wreck the place! I want to see how heedless and reckless you guys can be!" No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 31-35

Chapter 31

Tanya waved her hand as she roared. One by one, the bodyguards carried stools and started to smash the place up.

"Miss Tanya, don't, please don't. This is the Wilson family's business. Please show us mercy, Miss Tanya!" The restaurant manager no longer dared to be arrogant when facing the people from the Drake Family. He pleaded with a sad face, hoping that they would stop for the Wilson family's sake.

"The Wilson family! Hah, I don't care whose family business this is. You guys only act this way if I'm not around. If I catch you guys acting this way in front of me, it's only natural for me to smash up your place when I'm angry!" Tanya crossed her arms in front of her chest. She stood proudly as she belittled them.

Although there were numerous thugs from the Wilson family, they all lowered their heads. None of them dared to make a sound. They knew the Drake family's power. The Wilson family would not dare to offend the Drake family! However, what made them dumbfounded was Tanya nosing into other people's business. What did it have to do with her!?

"Miss Tanya, thank you very much. Did you say that we don't have to pay?" Upon seeing the situation, Fiona immediately stepped forward and asked. She could feel the resentment.

“Of course, you don’t have to pay a single, f*cking penny. I can’t stand people like these who bully the weak!” Tanya looked at the manager and said, “Tell me, do they still have to pay? If they have to pay, I’ll burn this whole place down!”

The manager was speechless. “No, no. They can take away the leftover 18 bottles of wine. They don’t even have to pay for their meal earlier. Miss Tanya, our boss and Ms. Taylor actually know each other. He was just joking. They don’t have to pay for their meal. Our boss already said that it’s free.” In regard to that, the manager said with a distressed face, “This, this is all a misunderstanding!”

The manager’s heart ached when he saw all the wrecked up tables and shelves. What had just happened?

“Ms. Taylor? You are Selena Taylor, right? You’re indeed a very beautiful woman. I’ve heard a lot about you, but this is my first time seeing you!” Tanya took a look at Selena and it was only then that she said to her bodyguards, “Stop now, that’s enough!”

After she finished talking, she spoke to Selena again, “Miss Selena, is this really a misunderstanding?”

Selena smiled bitterly. “You can call it that. Thank you very much for your help, Miss Tanya. I heard you like to fight against injustice and are a very helpful person. It’s my first time seeing you today. Thank you so much for your kindness!”

“Misunderstanding, how can this be a misunderstanding? These people said that we couldn’t leave if we don’t pay. Also, they insisted that we have to pay over 4 million dollars!” While asking the waiter to pack the wines on the table, Fiona spoke up, “Miss Tanya, I really owe you this time but what if they come searching for us if we leave without paying?”

“This is my name card, auntie. Keep it and call me whenever you need help! If they ever bother you and ask you to pay again, I will not let this shop survive!” Tanya smiled, took out a name card, and handed it to Fiona.

“Ah, that’s very kind of you.” Fiona was excited. She took the name card and smiled. “Thank you very

much, Miss Tanya!”

“Alright, you guys can leave now. They won’t dare to do anything!” Tanya stared at Jack who was standing at the side with a deep gaze. Then, she turned around and spoke to Selena. “Miss Selena, if you need any help in the future, give me a call!”

Jack frowned as he went deep in thought. Tanya came right on time; was it really a coincidence?

However, it did not matter whether it was a coincidence or not. At least she had helped them out.

He stepped forward and stretched out his hand. “Miss Tanya, thank you very much for your help. My name is Jack White. I’ll consider us as acquaintances. If the Drake family needs a helping hand in the future, feel free to contact me!”

Chapter 32

“No way. This guy wants to shake Miss Tanya’s hand? Isn’t he too overconfident?”

“That’s right. Does he even know who Miss Tanya is? He’s a live-in son-in-law and the reason why the Taylor family chased his wife’s family out of the house. Is a person like him in the position to shake Miss Tanya’s hand?” A few thugs standing behind the restaurant started to quietly gossip.

An ordinary person would not hear them as their voices were very soft. However, they were not aware that Jack had clearly heard everything they said. Jack paid no attention to them. Smiling, he kept looking at Miss Tanya standing in front of him.

“You’re welcome! Nice to meet you, I’m Tanya Drake! I heard you’re also from the army, right? I admire people like you the most. I appreciate your contribution to our country! If it wasn’t for guys like you, we wouldn’t have won this time!” Miss Tanya stretched out her hand and shook Jack’s in front of the crowd.

It seemed like Miss Tanya did not often shake hands with the opposite sex. She looked slightly shy and embarrassed when she did so.

“To protect our country is what we, the people of Daxia, should do!” Jack laughed and said, “I did not expect Miss Tanya to be such a kind-hearted and helpful person! We’re now acquaintances. Feel free to contact me if you need any help!”

Selena thought for a moment and walked to the manager. Then, she said in a soft voice, “Tell Young Master Wilson that he didn’t give anything for free. We did not pay because Miss Tanya despises your behavior. Do you understand?”

The manager’s lip twitched and he awkwardly smiled. “Of course, of course, it’s all for Miss Tanya’s sake!”

“I’m glad you know that so I don’t owe him anything!” Selena said coldly, feeling a gush of relief.

Earlier when they were upstairs, she promised Michael she would grab a coffee and hang with him because she had no other choice and could only say yes. Although she knew that she might be in danger and it would be hard for her to escape, there was nothing she could do about it. She could only bite the bullet and do it for the sake of her family and Kylie’s safety. She could only pray that Michael just wanted to grab coffee with her. She did not expect Tanya, who was passing by for dinner, to take the initiative to help them. In the end, they did not have to pay. As such, she could take back what she had promised earlier and did not owe Michael anything anymore. The most important thing was that Tanya was the one who helped them out so Michael would not dare to bother them after that.

“Miss Tanya, thank you so much for your help. I will certainly repay your kindness if we have the chance to in the future!” Selena turned around and said to Tanya, “We’ll make a move first then!”

“Alright, take care and goodbye!”

Chapter 33

In the end, Miss Tanya watched as Jack and the others left.

“You people better learn your lesson. I’ll let you go for what happened today. If you keep bothering them for today’s matter, I’ll end you guys. I don’t care whether you’re a part of the Wilson’s family!” After Jack and the others left, Tanya gave them a warning before she and her people drove away.

“Tanya Drake is so exasperating! Why didn’t she come sooner or later, instead of right on time? She could’ve come even just a few minutes later or waited until Selena and the others left. Things wouldn’t have been such a mess then!” Looking at the damage done, they had definitely suffered a great loss. The manager was furious. He did not know that at that moment, Michael was feeling joyful in the private room.

“That’s great, Young Master Wilson. Your method really worked! Selena’s face turned pale when she heard 4,000,000 dollars. Jack does not have that much money. I bet he doesn’t even have 400,000 dollars! Selena didn’t have any other choice. Once I threatened her with her daughter and parents, she could only listen to me. She promised me she would come up with an excuse to go on a coffee date with me!” Michael was very excited. He immediately called Ivan to tell him his victory.

“Congratulations Young Master Wilson!” Ivan, who was on the other side of the phone, sneered. “Young Master Wilson, just do as I say. Secretly add some ‘ingredients’ to the coffee and by that time, you will have her under your foot. She might even become more proactive!”

“Yes, that’s great. This mother*cking Selena is worried about losing face and will not tell others about this. I know her very well. If she tells others about it, not only will she be humiliated, she’ll be a disgrace to her parents and the Taylor family!” Michael burst out in hearty laughter. He had waited for too long. He was finally going to get the cold goddess who had always ignored him. At the thought of Selena’s almost perfect face and body, as well as her bodily scent, Michael almost had a nosebleed.

However, thinking that this might be his only chance, his face darkened. “Young Master Taylor, your method will work. However, knowing Selena’s character, she won’t tell others about it but it’ll be impossible to ask her out for a second date!” Upon saying that, Michael was slightly angry. “I planned to marry her in the future. If that’s the case, I will have such a beautiful woman for my entire life. However, if what I mentioned just now happens, I’ll only be able to feel her once. I won’t have the chance to do so anymore. I cannot accept that!”

Ivan kept silent for a few moments before saying, “Young Master Wilson, I’ve always thought that you

were just playing around with Selena. That you'd just throw her away after getting her, just like the other girls. I didn't expect you to be that serious about her!"

"Of course I'm serious about her. Selena is the prettiest and most gentlest woman I've ever met. Moreover, she's the most beautiful woman in the Middle Province. I think only the Drake family's second daughter can compete with her. Even then, Miss Tanya is not as charming as Selena. I like mature women like her!" Michael sighed as he talked. He was about to get Selena, but felt sorry for her at the same time. That was because he knew that Selena would hate him and refuse to marry him.

After thinking for a moment, Ivan on the other end, spoke up. "If you want to play with her a little bit longer, it's certainly not impossible!"

Chapter 34

"Really?" Michael's eyes brightened upon hearing that. His heart was filled with excitement.

He thought that he would only have one chance. Although it was only once, it was much better than not being able to get this goddess for a lifetime. Previously, he even hoped that there were no men in Selena's family as she would be a widow if Jack died. Then sooner or later, she would be moved by his efforts and agree to be together with him. He did not expect Jack, who was a soldier, to come back alive. Since then, he felt that the possibility to be together with Selena was far too slim. Therefore, when Ivan told him his method, he agreed without much thought. After all, he had been waiting for that day for years.

"Of course it's real but Young Master Wilson, about the profits on the project we're working on..." Ivan smiled coldly. He wanted to make a profit for the Taylor family's business to flourish. He would be a major contributor if the Taylor family made money. By that time, he could secure his position and nobody could take away his right to become the Master's successor. He did not care about the trauma Selena would go through. That woman had put herself through all that misery.

Old Master Taylor thought highly of Selena. Many people from the Taylor family felt that Selena had the chance to get a part of the Taylor family's business. Who knew that she would give up on herself. She had it coming and consequently, that gave him a great opportunity.

“Don’t worry. In regard to profits, I’ll give you 10 more points. In that case, your profits will double. You can rest assured as there won’t be such a good price out there!” Michael laughed and said, “Young Master Taylor, please hurry up and tell me what I can do. I can no longer wait. My lady might already be home by now. She might text me and ask me to pick her up anytime soon!”

“The method is very easy. If you want her for the long-term, you must have something you can hold against her. Aren’t you bringing her to a hotel? Why not use your phone or something to capture a few videos? You can use them to threaten her in the future! If she refuses to go out on a date with you after that, you can threaten to upload the videos to the internet. Do you think Selena would dare to reject you then?” Ivan smirked. “In that case, wouldn’t Young Master Wilson have her all for yourself? Moreover, she won’t have any choice but to be at your beck and call. Jack might not even realize he’s being cuckolded!”

“Haha, this is interesting and exciting!” Michael laughed loudly. “Alright then, I’ll stop bothering you now. I have to get myself dressed and go on a date early. after all, every minute is precious!” Excited, Michael hung up. In the private room, he twisted his fat body around and struck a pose he assumed was cool. Then, he happily walked downstairs.

When he got down however, he was stunned to see the scene before him. “What happened? Who the f*ck wrecked up our shop? Does that person have a death wish?”

Michael roared. He was angry. “Young Master Wilson, I was about to report this matter to you but you already came down. Ah, such rotten luck!” Wearing a long face, the manager slapped his thigh and sat on a stool.

Chapter 35

“There’s so many of you and none of you managed to stop them? Didn’t anyone fight back? Did you just sit back and watch them wreck the place?” Looking at his men standing there, Michael was furious. “Did I hire you for nothing?”

“Young Master Wilson, it’s not that we didn’t fight back or stop them, it’s because we didn’t dare to fight back!” The manager did not know whether to laugh or cry. “Jack wasn’t the one who did this. It was Miss Tanya Drake’s men.”

“Tanya Drake?” Michael gulped when he heard the name. “That girl. Why did she come here and wreck our place up?”

“Ah, she passed by our restaurant, thought it looked nice, and wanted to come in for a meal. After knowing what happened, she defended them and said we shouldn’t blackmail them. After that, she wrecked the place! The most important thing is that she let Jack and the others leave without having them pay. She also warned us not to bother them anymore!” The manager sighed. “In the end, Jack and Miss Taylor owe Tanya a favor. Before Miss Taylor left, she wanted me to tell you that you’re not the reason they didn’t have to pay as it was because Miss Tanya let them skip paying the bill. So...”

“Damn it!” Michael angrily stomped his foot. What did Selena mean by that? It was obvious. She was telling him to say goodbye to tonight’s date. “I lost what I just happened to get!”

Raging, Michael sat down on the floor. He was not reconciled. What rotten luck. He had almost succeeded but ended up meeting with the nosy Miss Tanya.

...

At that moment, Jack and the others were already on their way home.

“Thanks to Miss Tanya’s kindness, we got to vent our anger today!” Hand carrying several bottles of wine, Fiona said that with a smile. Jack and Selena’s hands were also occupied with several bottles too.

“Since the last time, I heard that Miss Tanya has a good personality. There was an old man who accidentally scraped her car but considering his age, she didn’t let the person pay a single penny.”

“Not only is she kind-hearted, but Miss Tanya is also very pretty too. She deserves to be rich!” Andrew was filled with strong emotions.

“You’re right. She’s very rich. Unlike us, we can hardly dine out, yet we almost couldn’t leave!” Fiona was smiling, inadvertently taking a glance at Jack who was beside her. Her expression instantly turned cold. “It was all someone’s fault for acting like a rich guy when he had no money. If we had the money, would we have to suffer this kind of treatment?”

Joan was not pleased to hear that. Fiona used to make lots of sarcastic remarks before Jack came back. However, she could endure it back then. Now that Fiona was criticizing her son in front of her, she could not hold back anymore. She said, “My son’s mother-in-law, you can’t phrase your words like that. You can’t blame Jack for this, right? How is it possible that a meal would cost four million? It’s obvious that person was blackmailing us. No matter how rich we are, we shouldn’t have had to pay four million, right?”

“Haha, you’re putting it in such a way as though Jack would pay if it was 400,000!” Fiona let out a contemptuous smile.

“If they didn’t blackmail me, I would have paid 400,000 for a meal.” Jack calmly replied.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 36-40

Chapter 36

“You would pay 400,000?” Fiona laughed coldly when she heard that. “ Just keep acting. Look at yourself, I highly doubt you’d have that much money.” Another thought struck her mind after she said that. She then said to Selena, “By the way, Selena, the Taylor family works in the construction material industry. You’ve worked for them all this while, but it’s too bad that you’re restricted from it now. You can’t even find a job. Many companies dare not hire you because they’re tied to Ivan!”

“You’re right. Ah, I have no other choice. Ivan already said that he will only leave me alone if I become a garbage collector! Otherwise, he’ll create a ruckus no matter where I work. That’s why no one dares offend him as they want to avoid trouble.” Selena sighed. “Now that Jack is back, our family will be better off if we’re both working!”

“That’s true. Although it might be tough, we won’t be so miserable right now if we find a job!” Fiona sighed.” That was why I was thinking about Miss Drake. Didn’t she give us her name card earlier? Since

she's so kind-hearted and likes to help others, why don't we give her a call and see if she can help us find one? What do you think?"

"Mum, I don't think that's a good idea. We did not have any acquaintances with the Drake family before this. They helped us earlier and we have yet to repay them. How can we trouble them again? Moreover, Miss Drake gave us the name card and told us to find her if we need help simply out of courtesy. Are you actually thinking of troubling her?" Slightly embarrassed, Selena said that as she smiled bitterly.

"What's wrong with that? Sometimes, you have to be more thick-skinned. Isn't it better to have a proper job rather than to collect garbage? Besides, Kylie is going to kindergarten soon. If you don't find a proper job, what will happen to us? Doesn't your daughter have to study?" Fiona continued immediately. "I think that this might work. Didn't you say that you want to repay Miss Drake? This would be a great opportunity. You can work in their company and help them make a profit by improving their performance rates. That's a way of repayment, is it not?"

"That's true!" Selena frowned and said, "It's too late now. Give me the name card and I'll check tomorrow if the job's still available. Ivan won't be able to do anything if I work with the Drake family. The Drake family do not care about his whims."

"Yes, yes. That's right!" Fiona nodded. "You might earn a better salary with a better job."

Soon after, they arrived at their home. After putting the wine away, Fiona said to Jack, "Jack, this wine is very expensive. Selena's father likes it a lot so you better not drink in secret, alright? You can drink it if you buy it from us. It's 20 million per bottle!"

Selena's face darkened when she heard that. "Mum, what are you talking about? He's your son-in-law and also a part of our family, what's wrong with him drinking a bottle or two?"

"Who said anything about him being my son-in-law?" Fiona retorted, "Anyways, I will not accept him until he gives us 10 million worth of betrothal gifts on your grandfather's birthday. It is only until he fulfills this promise with your grandfather and we can go back to the Taylor family that I'll accept him!"

Chapter 37

In regards to that, Fiona stopped for a moment and said, "Of course he can't do it. If he can't bring us the betrothal gift, my son-in-law might end up changing into either Young Master Wilson or Young Master Clark!"

Jack pulled Selena back when he saw her urge to argue with Fiona. "Forget it, Selena. Mum is right. You are indeed a wonderful woman. I won't let you down on grandfather's birthday! You're my woman and nobody can take you away!"

Seeing Jack's determined gaze, Selena's anger disappeared as warmth lled her instead. She nodded shyly and said, "I believe in you. I heard that the battlefield was very dangerous and many died, but you stayed there for ve years and survived. You must be better than others."

Fiona's face turned sour upon hearing those sweet words. She quickly reminded Selena, "Selena, I told you not to fall for his sweet-talk. He won't be our son-in-law if he can't give us 10 million worth of betrothal gifts. You must not allow him to touch you until then, alright?" Speaking of that, Fiona looked at Kylie and said, "I didn't chase him out of the house just for Kylie's sake. We're kind enough to let him live with us temporarily! "

"Grandma, why does daddy want to touch mummy? Is he beating mummy up? Daddy, you cannot beat mummy up, okay?" Kylie, who was only a little over four years old, looked at Fiona with a confused expression. It was obvious she seemed a little bit anxious!

"Kylie, that's not what it means. How would daddy have the heart to beat mummy up?" Jack was embarrassed when he heard what Kylie said. Immediately, he carried her and walked into the room. "Let's go, it's time for you to sleep. Daddy will tell you a story later, alright?"

"Alright! Mummy, daddy is going to tell me a story!" Kylie squealed to Selena excitedly.

A comforting smile appeared on Selena's face as she saw Kylie beaming back at her. After Jack carried Kylie into the room, Selena started saying to Fiona, "Mom, you can see that Kylie must have her father by her side. Kylie likes Jack a lot. After all, blood is thicker than water. I've made up my mind; I will stay with Jack even if he can't give us 10 million dollars!"

“My daughter, are you stupid? You have to think about Kylie’s future. All the other children can attend good schools, enjoy the best education, play with expensive toys, and wear nice clothes. Kylie is so mature despite her young age. Do you want her to suffer with you her entire life? I’m not only doing this for your sake, but also for your kid. What’s the point of staying with a bum like him? Are you going to be poor your whole life? A woman’s time is limited and we grow old quickly. You waited for him for five years. That was five years of youth! You cannot waste your youth like that again!”

Fiona started to persuade Selena. “You are already 25. You were 20 and immature back then so I don’t blame you. However, you have to know that men have more value as they grow older compared to women. You still have assets right now and are still young. The rich young masters are still interested in you. Do you think they will still be into you when you grow older and reach 30? It’ll be too late for you to regret then!”

“I won’t regret it!” Selena shouted and went straight back into the room.

Chapter 38

Not long after listening to Jack’s story, Kylie fell asleep.

In that moment, Tanya had already arrived at the Drake family’s home. She went to see her father.

“How was it? Did you meet the guy named Jack?” James asked Tanya eagerly as soon as he saw her.

Tanya poured herself half a glass of wine. She swirled it around before taking a sip. Then she said, “Yes, I saw him. He’s quite good-looking and manly too!”

James was speechless. “Did I ask you to admire his face? I asked you to befriend him and keep in touch with him. Think of it as having another friend. Although he’s not as good as the God of War Lana, they’re very similar. The most important thing is that he and Lana are very good friends. Befriending him means we’re on our way to reaching the skills of the God of War.”

Tanya took another sip of her wine. She put her glass down on the table and said solemnly, "Dad, I don't understand. If we want to fawn over this God of War from the Middle Province, why don't we just fawn over Lana? Even though Jack's status is quite high, he can't be better than the God of War, right?"

"You know nothing." James's eyes showed a depth of wisdom. He grabbed his own wine glass and poured some for himself. He then sat on the sofa, crossed his legs, and said, "Lana is a very cold woman. Approaching her is no easy task. She's already giving me face by accepting the God of War mansion I gave her. Moreover, I don't know what a woman like her desires! I can't find out how to help her!"

After saying that, James stopped for a moment before he continued, "On the contrary, Jack is a live-in son-in-law. He had no other choice but to become a live-in son-in-law to save his mother's life back then. He replaced Ivan in the army. Now, he came back and has a daughter. Although his wife has no thoughts of leaving him, the Taylor family still looks down on him!"

Tanya understood her father's intention after hearing what he had to say. She nodded her head, "I know what you mean now. You mean the God of War Lana doesn't need our help, but Jack does. As long as we keep in touch with them and help them out more, it's equivalent to giving

Lana a helping hand!"

James smiled and took a sip from his glass as he started praising her, "You are indeed my daughter. You understand right away. Helping Jack means helping a friend of the God of War. This means that the next time we need Lana's help, she'll help us!" Then, he asked again, "Right, you haven't told me how things went today?"

"Don't worry, I gave them my name card. I was there right on time. If we were there just a little bit later, I'm afraid we would have lost a very good opportunity! So this was what happened. We went there, and..." Tanya quickly told James what had happened. Then, she said happily, "Jack isn't an indifferent guy. He even shook my hand to express his gratitude before he left. However, something feels strange..."

"Strange?" James was stunned. "Why do you say so?"

Tanya spoke after thinking for a while. "Logically, a soldier would have calluses on their palms as they often use guns. Despite that, I realized Jack hardly has any calluses on his palms. They were very smooth. It was as though he had never been to the army!"

James was shocked. He thought about it for a moment and said, "Maybe he didn't go onto the battlefield but worked in the logistic department. Whatever it is, help them as much as possible. Even if he asks for 10 billion dollars, give it to him, alright? I believe that there must be something special between him and Lana."

...

The next morning, Ivan eagerly gathered all the Taylor family relatives as they came looking for Old Master Taylor and his father.

Chapter 39

"Ivan, what's the matter? It's so early in the morning and you have everybody gathered here. Do you have something important to announce?" Theodore, the Taylor family's head, asked in confusion as he looked at his son.

"I have good news for everybody. I received a big project this time. The crucial thing is that we've never worked on such an expensive project before. I estimate that we can earn at least 300 Million Dollars from this project." Ivan smiled as he said that, wearing a proud look on his face.

He believed that Michael was a man of his words, so he could not hold back his excitement. Hands trembling, he gathered everyone and told about it.

"That's great, this must be a real project!"

"That's right, Young Master Ivan is such a competent man. He got us such a big project. Moreover, the profits are exceptionally high!" A few relatives from the Taylor family gasped in admiration.

"Really? Did you sign the contract?" The old Master Taylor was very happy as well after hearing the news. It would be a major profit. It had been quite some time since the Taylor family last received such a project and it was worth around 300 Million Dollars of profit. The Taylor family had to pay attention to this project.

"The contract draft is done. Young Master Wilson already agreed to the project. We made a deal through the phone,"

"Granda, I will meet him later and get the contract signed. Don't worry, it's already settled." Ivan immediately patted his chest and reassured his grandfather.

However, he did not tell them about how that bum, Jack, was now being cuckolded. Selena might have even been crying under her sheets right now.

"Then hurry up and get the contract signed. Nothing is settled yet until the contract is signed, alright? One can change their mind very easily when it comes to verbal promises!" Extremely delighted, old Master Taylor immediately reminded Ivan.

"Yes, yes. Hurry up. Let's book a hotel and celebrate when you come back! Let's have lunch together!" Theodore was even more excited. He felt very proud of his son finally achieving something. He had finally made money for the Taylor family.

"That's great. It's been quite a while since we last had dinner together." The old Master nodded his head and agreed. "Let's make a reservation at a more luxurious hotel. What about the Dorsett Hotel?"

"Alright, Dorsett Hotel is a five-star hotel. It's very expensive!" Theodore laughed heartily.

"By the way, grandpa, should we invite Selena and that bum? The more, the merrier!" Ivan immediately proposed the idea when the thought came into his mind.

He wanted to see how Selena would force herself to smile after sleeping with Michael last night.

Of course, he also wanted to show Selena that he was a competent man. Without Selena, he was still capable of helping the Taylor Group flourish.

Chapter 40

“You want to invite those bumpkins? Young Master Ivan, you’re trying to show off, right?” Unexpectedly, Cecilia stepped forward and exposed Ivan’s intentions.

Embarrassed, Ivan explained himself hurriedly, “What nonsense are you talking about? Am I such a person?” Ivan stopped for a moment before continuing, “After all, Selena is also part of the Taylor family. She is grandpa’s biological granddaughter. This is considered a big event for the Taylor family. Inviting her to such a grand celebration benefits us too. Otherwise, other influential people might call us stingy if they knew we didn’t invite her. Besides, it doesn’t cost much to invite a few more people, right?”

Satisfied, Old Master Taylor nodded his head. “Indeed, Ivan has grown up now. You’re more matured these days. You have to keep this mindset if you want to achieve great things in life! After all, it’s been five years and many have already forgotten about that incident. It wouldn’t hurt to invite them over for a meal!”

“Grandpa is absolutely correct. That was my intention. I want them to know that we’re very generous.” Ivan laughed. “Alright, grandpa. I’ll go get the contract signed now. You can book the reservation at the hotel in the meanwhile. We’ll have lunch at 12pm sharp. I’ll be ready to bring you the good news!”

“Alright. You go ahead!” The old master laughed. Undertaking such a big project with a 300 million dollars profit was enough to prove Ivan’s ability. If Ivan could undertake more projects like this in the future, he would consider handing over the Taylor family’s business to Ivan.

Looking at the old master’s delighted face, Theodore was very happy as well. Finally, Ivan had made him proud for once. Although he was the head of the Taylor family, the old master never gave him any rights

because he used to have a gambling addiction. There was this one time he had lost 10 million dollars in one night. Since then, the old master never trusted him. Five years ago, the old master thought highly of Selena's talent of conducting business. He even wanted to pass down the family business to her. Theodore was slightly flustered by that thought. However, he never imagined Selena's wayward behaviour would end up destroying her own bright future and benefit his son instead. Although his son liked to play around, he could finally heave a sigh of relief today. In spite of Ivan's words, many family members of the Taylor family knew that Ivan wanted to invite Selena and her family over for lunch to show off his abilities.

...

The sun was shining brightly above a garden. Jack came back carrying a linen sack.

"Mum, you don't have to go to work. I told you to just stay at home. I can take care of you!" Jack smiled as he talked to Joan.

"But my heart cannot be at peace if I don't work. After all, we need money." Joan smiled bitterly. It was tough sweeping the streets under the hot sun, but she could not find a better job as she got older. She suffered a lot over these past few years for the sake of supporting her family.

Suddenly, Jack put his hand into the sack and took out a bundle of cash. He handed her 50 thousand dollars. "Mum, I just went to pick up some money. Here is your pocket money. Do you feel more at peace now?"

No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 41-45

Chapter 41

"This is for you, take it!" Jack laughed and shoved the money into Joan's arms.

Fiona's eyes lit up as she witnessed this. She walked over quickly and said, "You little brat, you're only giving your mother money now that you have some? We've been taking care of your kids and suffering

so much, how come you're not giving any to us? You should give us some for all the money we've spent on your kids, shouldn't you?"

Jenny the maid could not stand it anymore. She mumbled, "You haven't been working for the past few years and don't have any income. Kylie was basically raised by Miss and their income was earned from Miss going out and about to scavenge for her and Joan's salary through her office job. You haven't spent a cent, how dare you ask for compensation!"

After hearing that, Joan angrily said, "Hey, you stupid girl, what are you talking about? You're just a maid, what does this have anything to do with you?"

"Mom, if you want the money, you can have it. However, you'll have to acknowledge this son-in-law. Otherwise, why would he give you the money?" Selena walked over and rolled her eyes at her mother.

Fiona's expression changed after hearing that. She said coldly, "It's just a bit of money, it's not like I've never come across such a sum before. You want me to acknowledge him for this bit of money? No way!"

Jack did not care about his mean mother-in-law. He passed the bag to Selena and said, "Take the money inside and spend it, there should be enough for groceries and to register Kylie for school. There should be enough for some time."

"How, how much money is in here?" Selena lifted the heavy bag. She was stunned. Was this weight all from the cash in the bag?

Fiona was no longer calm. Before Jack could say anything, she walked over and grabbed the bag to pour out its contents.

Seeing the cash on the ground, Fiona inhaled sharply and asked, "This is a lot of money, how much is there?"

Jack laughed forcefully and said, "Not much, I withdrew a million dollars, gave my mom 50 thousand dollars for change, and there's still 950 thousand dollars left!"

Fiona swallowed her saliva. She nearly cried. "950 thousand dollars, I haven't seen this much money in so long! This is great, I don't have to live frugally anymore now!"

"Mom, pick it up. That's a lot of money. If someone else sees it, we'll be in trouble!" Selena reminded her mother anxiously while silently breathing a sigh of relief. "This is great, Kylie can now study in a better kindergarten."

"It seems like you're not that useless after all. This should be the money you received from leaving the army, right? The government is pretty good to you after all for giving you a million dollars. Together with the money you gave Selena for clothes, it should be about 1.2 million dollars in total," Fiona said while picking up the cash to put into the bag.

To her, Jack must have withdrawn everything he had to please them and have them acknowledge him as their son-in-law. He must have really wanted to impress her.

After being deep in thought, she said, "Jack, this 950 thousand dollars shall be the compensation for raising Kylie for the past five years. It's your child after all, so you should be paying for her. Don't you dare think that I will acknowledge you as our son-in-law for this money. I reiterate my point, if you can't whip out 10 million dollars for dowry on Selena's grandfather's 70th birthday party, you still need to get out of the Taylors' house. Understood?"

Chapter 42

"Hah, don't worry mom. I mean what I said! Take this money for Selena's groceries and register Kylie for school!" Jack said while laughing.

Fiona scoffed. "Hmph, as long as you're aware of it!"

Before the cash was picked up, a young man unexpectedly walked in with a young girl who had a tattoo

on her arm. They both seemed like they were about 18 or 19 years old. The young man had blonde hair with an ear-piercing. It was an ear stud.

“Wow, that’s a lot of cash!” The young man ran over upon seeing the cash. He picked it up and said excitedly, “God, this is a lot! There’s some in the bag as well. There must be a million dollars here, right? I haven’t seen this much money in a long time!”

“Who are you? Put it down!” Seeing the young man’s face angered Jack. He stared straight at the man and spoke coldly.

“You, who are you?” The young man looked back at Jack and was so shocked by Jack’s sharp gaze that he dropped the cash he was holding onto.

“Jack, what are you getting angry about? Don’t you recognize Ben anymore?” Fiona glared at Jack.

“Ben?” Jack was stunned for a while before coming to a realization. “Oh, it’s Ben, he was only 14 when I left. He’s so tall now and all grown up, I couldn’t recognize him!”

“F*ck, here I was thinking who was this guy being this angry at me. You’re the useless brother-in-law!” Ben snapped out of it and continued, “I thought you were dead. Who knew that you would make it back! For five years, you’ve put our family through sh*t!”

The young girl came over and stood next to Ben. She checked Jack out and said, “Ben, is this the useless, live-in son-in-law who became one just to get a million dollars for his mother’s medical costs, then went to war the next day?”

Ben’s eyes were filled with hostility. “Yes, it’s this bastard who agreed to a sham marriage at first, but took advantage of my sister on their wedding night seeing that she was a little drunk. He got my sister pregnant. If it wasn’t for this bastard, our family would not have been kicked out by Old Master Taylor. We would still be staying in our mansion and living a good life!”

“So it was this bastard, how evil!” The woman looked over at Jack in anger and said, “I can’t believe you’re still shameless enough to come back. If it wasn’t for you, would we be staying in a place like this? If I was you, I’d rather die at war than come back and embarrass myself!”

“Xena, who are you to say that? I was drunk that night but I knew for a fact that I made the first move. I was angry at Grandpa for treating our marriage like a deal! It was my fault. I was too naive, and I caused mom, dad, and my brother to live frugally with me for the past five years. I’ll try my best to make it up to them from now on but it has already happened and I’ve taken responsibility for it. You can’t blame Jack for this!” Selena could not take it anymore after hearing what Xena said. She looked at her in the eye and said, “No matter what, this is my family’s business, You’re nobody to butt in, are you?”

“Ben, look, look at your sister. She’s saying that I’m a nobody. I’ve yet to marry you and she’s already this mean to me. When I marry you in the future, who knows how she’ll treat me then?” Xena was pissed. She tugged on Ben’s arm with her hands and threw a tantrum.

Chapter 43

“On top of that, Jack is the one who put you in this position but you’re still siding with him. I really don’t understand how you think,” Ben continued to speak on Xena’s behalf.

“No matter what, we have a marriage certificate. We’re legally husband and wife so we’re a family! You’ve said it yourself, Xena has yet to marry you. We’ll only be a family in the future, not now. So she should not butt into our family’s business right now!” Selena was still up in arms about it. It seemed like she was prejudiced toward Xena.

“I don’t care, it’s your happiness anyway. If you’re willing to marry a soldier, a useless man, we can’t do anything about it! Aren’t you the cause of where you are today? If you didn’t do such a stupid thing back then, you would’ve been the chairman of the Taylor Group by now! The beautiful chairman is no longer who she was, what a shame!” Xena said while crossing her arms in front of her chest.

“If you don’t want to care, shut up!” Jack said coldly after seeing how she was treating Selena.

“You...” Xena was so angry that she began breathing heavily. Her expression was horrible.

“You bastard, you got our family into this mess and not only are you not apologizing, you’re pissing my lady off. You’re asking to get beaten up, aren’t you!” Seeing what was happening, Ben, who was usually protective of his girlfriend, walked over and clenched his fists. He threw a punch at Jack.

“Ben, are you nuts? No matter what, he’s still your brother-in-law. He did not do anything wrong back then. We were both drunk...” Selena was now pissed seeing that Ben wanted to start a fight.

Meanwhile, Jack bent backward in the face of Ben’s fist. He easily avoided the attack.

“I don’t believe this!” Seeing that he did not hit Jack, Ben got up and aimed his fists at him again. Unfortunately, his attack was nothing for Jack. No matter how he tried, Jack looked like he knew where Ben was trying to hit him and avoided it every time.

“Goddamnit, if you’re a man, stop avoiding my hits. What kind of hero are you if you’re avoiding my punches!” Ben was panting after throwing a few empty punches. He stopped and put one hand on his waist while pointing a finger at Jack with the other.

“Seeing that you’re Selena’s brother, I don’t want to hit you. Otherwise, you’d be on the ground by now!”

“Seeing how you are right now, you must not be big on exercising. With a body like yours, you would’ve been dead a hundred times over at war!” Jack said coldly.

“I...” Ben was pissed, but remembered that the guy standing in front of him had spent five years at war. How could he beat that?

Ben clapped his hands and said, “I’m not going to waste my time on a boorish fellow like you!”

Ben turned around to see the cash-filled bag and asked excitedly, "Mom, where did the money come from?"

Chapter 44

"Yeah mom, where did the money come from?" Xena ran over and endearingly called Fiona "mom".

Fiona was stunned for a moment before looking excited. "Girl, what did you call me? Didn't you call me Aunty before this?"

Xena became shy and said in embarrassment, "Aunty, I'm sorry. I've been wanting to call you 'mom' for some time, but I was never brave enough to do so. I accidentally did what I've been wanting to do just now!"

"Hey, that's great, girl. You should call me 'mom' and not 'aunty' then. Your dad and I like you, so just call me 'mom' from now on. You've been in a serious relationship with Ben and are going to get married someday anyway, aren't you?" Fiona was so happy that the smile on her face was extremely bright.

"Mom, you haven't told me, where did the money come from? Why is there so much money? Could it be that there's a rich Master somewhere trying to marry my sister and giving this as dowry?" Ben asked excitedly. It seemed like he really wanted his sister to marry a rich guy so that his family would be able to live better again.

"No, it's not dowry!" Fiona forced a smile before looking at Jack and said, "It's Jack's money for Kylie. There's 950 thousand dollars here, he should be giving this amount!"

"He gave this?" Ben looked back at Jack with a peculiar gaze. "Could he really have withdrawn this much money? Does being a soldier pay this much?"

"You don't know this, but I've heard that those who leave the army will get compensation. Those who spent a shorter time in the army could get about 100 to 200 thousand dollars so since Jack spent five years in the army, he should be getting more!"

“If this bastard could get a million dollars, I think he must’ve achieved meritorious service in the army. Otherwise he wouldn’t be able to get this much!” Fiona smiled and lifted the heavy bag while saying, “This bastard is a bit compassionate after all. He brought some money back for us as compensation. If he died at war, we could’ve gotten nothing!”

Ben nodded. “Since he had the decency to bring money over, that’s alright of him. However, Jack, don’t you dare think that making me call you my brother-in-law is this easy!”

“The money is for Selena to buy groceries and register Kylie for school. Selena should be keeping this!” Jack said coldly while looking at Fiona’s grip on the bag of cash.

“You don’t need this much money for groceries and school, do you? Even if you’re looking at a fancy kindergarten, it should cost about 10 or 20 thousand dollars per semester, shouldn’t it?” Fiona said.

“How much does the best one cost?” Jack asked Selena.

“It must be about 50 thousand dollars, but that’s for a year!” Selena forced a smile and said, “Is it really necessary to go to such a good school?”

“Of course, Kylie must go to a better school!” Jack nodded and stared at Fiona. Jack’s gaze was threatening; even Fiona did not dare look straight at him.

“Fine, fine, here’s 100 thousand dollars for Kylie’s school fees and the living expenses for now. When you’re out of money, take some from me!”

“I’ll hold onto the money, otherwise, I won’t feel secure about it!” Fiona counted 100 thousand dollars and passed it to Selena. She was adamant on not handing over the other 850 thousand dollars.

“Mom, there’s still 850 thousand dollars and I’m out of money. Since there’s so much, you should give me some, shouldn’t you?”

“On top of that, Xena’s been dating me for so long but I’ve yet to buy her anything nice...” Ben said shamelessly.

“Fine, fine, here’s 50 thousand dollars. Go get a gift or something for Xena!”

Chapter 45

Fiona pulled out another 50 thousand dollars with a smile.

“Thanks mom!” Xena happily thanked Fiona.

Jack ignored them and approached Andrew. “Dad, I can cure your leg!”

“Can you really do that?” Of course, Andrew wished that his leg could recover. Now that Jack mentioned it, his cloudy eyes lit up.

“Are you exaggerating? Even the head of the orthopedic hospital took a look at my dad’s leg and said there was nothing he could do. How can you cure it?”

Ben walked over and said, “I remember you used to be a delivery boy before serving in the army. After being a soldier for five years, you now know how to cure someone? Could it be that you joined the medical team to treat the wounded?”

“No wonder he made it out alive after spending five years on the battleground, he wasn’t a frontliner at all, he was just treating the wounded!” Xena crossed her arms in front of her chest and said sarcastically, “I thought he was a hero, but he was just backup, haha!”

Jack ignored the duo and said to Andrew, "Dad, don't worry. You're Selena's father and that makes you my father as well. I'll never harm you!" After hearing such earnest words, Andrew was visibly moved by Jack. It seemed like he wanted to give it a try.

"That might be untrue, you've put us through hell for five years. Five years. Just imagine the number of days and nights!" Fiona reminded Jack with a sarcastic tone, "If your medical skills aren't up to par and end up completely ruining your dad's leg, it'll really be over for him!"

"Uh..." Andrew started hesitating. If Jack's skills were not up to standard and made his leg worse, it would be over for him.

"Dad, I trust him, let him try it!" Selena advised Andrew.

"Fine, let's try it. Since it's already in this state, it can't get any worse than this!" Andrew sat down on a stone-made stool next to him, rolled up his pants, and let Jack inspect his leg.

Jack took a look and felt Andrew's leg before pulling out a small box with a long needle inside.

"Is pricking it with a silver needle sufficient? Wouldn't I require medicine or something?" Seeing what was going on, Ben could not help but ask Jack.

"Could this pricking ruin my leg?" Andrew was a little worried.

"Don't worry, this is acupuncture, a type of treatment in Chinese medicine. It's magical. After this, I'll massage your leg and dredge the blood vessels. You'll be cured over a few days!" Jack smiled. He was confident. Although the Taylor family was always looking down on him and could not wait to kick him out of the family, Jack understood that he was the one who got Selena pregnant. Their family was chased out of the mansion and forced to stay in such a shabby place. He was responsible for it and if it was anyone else, they would blame Jack as well.

Moreover, they were all Selena's family, so Jack did not want to ruin the relationship with them. After all, Andrew's leg became what it was because of himself. He had been feeling guilty about it. Just as Jack was treating Andrew, Fiona got a call.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 46-50

Chapter 46

"Dorsett Hotel? The famous Dorsett Hotel in the city center? The five-star hotel where the minimum spend is 100 thousand dollars?" Xena asked excitedly after hearing about it.

"Of course it is, are there any other Dorsett Hotels around?" Fiona's face was filled with pride. She lamented, "The old master has finally come to his senses and actually let us go over for lunch. He has never called us over for anything worth celebrating before this!"

"That's great, it looks like Old Master Taylor is gradually accepting you guys!" Xena smiled excitedly before saying shyly, "Mom, can I follow you?"

Fiona was floating from being called 'mom'. She nodded, "Of course you can, you're my son's girlfriend and my future daughter-in-law. You can definitely have lunch with us, don't worry!"

"That's great!" Fiona thought of something and said, "Right, it's still early. Ben, bring Xena shopping, she's showing up with you today!"

"Yes! Let's go and shop!" Ben grabbed the 50 thousand dollars and left with Xena immediately.

"Mom, it's not really a good idea to bring Xena along, is it?" After the duo left, Selena was silent for a moment before saying, "They're still dating and have yet to get married, she's not a part of our family yet!"

"What's so bad about it? They've been together for two or three years already so isn't it going to happen soon?" Fiona continued, "Did you not see how happy Xena was when she heard she could go to

a five-star hotel? She's even shopping for it. She's got decent looks anyway, which would make us look better today. On top of that, won't she join the family sooner if we start treating her like one?"

"Fine!" Selena knew that it was pointless to debate; her mother was not going to listen. Moreover, her mother did promise Xena that she could come today and based on her personality, Fiona would not change her mind.

"Done!" After performing the acupuncture, Jack began massaging Andrew's leg. A faint, warm feeling flowed from Jack's palm to Andrew's leg and into his bones.

"It doesn't hurt at all. I had lost all feeling in this part of my leg and the doctor did say that it would only get worse and I would be disabled. Who knew that I would feel something now!" Andrew felt something and his face was filled with excitement.

"Really? You're able to feel something this soon?" Fiona crossed her arms in front of her chest and said in disbelief, "Is it just an illusion? How could that be possible? He's just messing around and did not prescribe you anything. How could you be getting better?"

"This isn't an illusion, is it? It's quite obvious!" Andrew frowned. It was evident that he felt a bit unsure.

"Dad, don't worry. You'll feel more tomorrow and be cured in about a week." Jack smiled and said so with confidence as he stood up.

Chapter 47

"Young man, these are your words. If he doesn't recover by then, you'll have to get lost!" Fiona said as she grabbed Jack by his collar. She was a little excited as well.

"Mom, you'll find out whether it works in two days!" Jack replied with a smile.

“Okay, we shall see!” After saying so, Fiona looked over at the cash-filled bag and took it back into the house to hide it.

As it approached noon, Ben returned with Xena and a few sets of clothes in tow. Xena seemed more beautiful than ever. Kylie was dressed in the clothes Jack got her yesterday. She seemed classier than before. After drying the clothes she put in the laundry yesterday, Selena put on a dress and her gorgeous appearance immediately outshined Xena.

“Sister, you’re beautiful and definitely worthy of the title as Eastfield’s most beautiful woman. Your child is already a few years old and your body still looks amazing. I couldn’t tell that you’re married!” Xena walked over and immediately started praising Selena.

“I’m no match for you young girls, you’re more energetic!” Selena said nonchalantly. She did not care much for Xena.

“Let’s go, let’s go, we can’t be late and let the old master wait for us. Otherwise, they’ll be unhappy!” Fiona took a look at the time and they were running late.

The group left and called for a cab. Soon after that, they arrived at the entrance of a huge hotel. The hotel was grand. Under the sunlight, it seemed extra shiny and classy.

“The people who eat here are rich and famous and we as the Taylor family rarely come here!” Andrew stood on the piazza outside the hotel and lamented. “It seems like the old master is not that angry at us anymore so let’s hope we get to return to the Taylor family, sigh!”

“We can. Dad, let’s go in?” Xena went over to hold Andrew and called him ‘dad’ endearingly. However, Jack realized Selena’s frown while watching this unfold.

...

Meanwhile in Michael's mansion, Ivan ran over to him and excitedly asked, "Master Wilson, how was it? Were you relaxed last night?"

"Relaxed? Haha, of course I was!" Michael sneered and replied sarcastically. He was still pissed at what happened last night.

Not only did he not get any girl, on top of having his restaurant trashed last night, the image of a gentleman he had been keeping up in front of Selena was ruined. He would probably never get a chance with her again.

Ivan did not realize how angry Michael was at the moment. He continued saying with a smile, "Relaxed is great, relaxed is great. This cousin of mine has an amazing body so you must have taken a few photos of her, right? Just threaten her with them in the future and she'll definitely come over. I've thought it out for you, give her some money every time and she'll gradually give in to you one day and end up marrying you!"

"Look, this is the contract, let's sign it. I got someone to draw up the new contract overnight according to our deal yesterday!"

Chapter 48

"Hey, hey, what's wrong? Master Wilson, why did you tear it? Didn't we agree to signing the contract today?" Ivan was dumbfounded at the scene. His head was ringing and the Taylor family was waiting for him to go home and celebrate. Could this whole thing be ruined?

"Sign your a**!" Master Wilson sat on the sofa and said angrily, "Last night, I did not even drink my coffee or do anything I wanted to. Not only was my reputation ruined, my restaurant was trashed and I did not dare to even say a word throughout the ordeal!"

"How could that be? What's going on? I knew it, is it Jack? This bastard had the courage to trash your restaurant? Wait, that's not right, where were your men? Don't you have a ton of them? Were they no match for Jack?"

Ivan inhaled sharply. He thought that Michael was successful with Selena last night and did not expect the opposite to be the case. He did not understand how this happened even after Selena's consent.

Michael became pissed upon thinking about what happened last night. "Jack didn't do it, he wouldn't have the guts to. How could he even possess that ability? It was the second daughter of the Drake family, that b*tch Tanya Drake!"

"No way, Tanya Drake? Why was she there?" Once again, Ivan was shocked after hearing that it was Tanya. It was the Drake family after all; there were plenty of families trying to please them.

"Here's what happened, this Tanya Drake coincidentally walked past our restaurant and saw that the interior design was decent. Because of that, she decided to go in for a meal, but..." Defeatedly, Michael continued, "This Tanya Drake is so lifeless that she likes going around causing trouble. She's so annoying!"

Ivan finally understood what had happened last night. He stayed silent for a moment before saying, "Master Wilson, look, it was an accident. None of us expected Tanya Drake to show up, did we?"

He paused and pulled another contract out of his briefcase. "Therefore, I can't be blamed for that. Thankfully I've made a copy of the contract. Master Wilson, let this go and sign it, shall we? Okay? Please remember all the years we've been friends!"

"Sign my a**!"

Master Wilson did not hold back from shaming Ivan. He turned his face away and said, "You're the one who gave me the sh*tty idea to get Selena and now I've yet to get her. I've also suffered quite a loss in my restaurant as well. Did you really think I'm still going to sign the contract with you? Based on the fact that I haven't asked you for compensation, I'm already being compassionate enough about this! I used to have a good rapport with Selena, but now I can never get near her again."

“But Master Wilson, my grandpa and the others thought that I’d be signing the contract. They’re waiting for me to go home and celebrate.”

Ivan’s face turned sour and pleaded, “I can’t be blamed for this. If it wasn’t for the Drake family’s second daughter, wouldn’t you have succeeded?”

“Escort the guest out of here!”

...

Meanwhile, it was lively at the Dorsett Hotel’s private room.

Old Master Taylor was all smiles. The private room was huge; it was big enough to fit three large tables. Everyone was happy.

“Let’s just wait till Selena’s family and Ivan arrive, then we shall begin!”

Chapter 49

“Yes, even the champagne is out. The old master has gone all out this time paying a million dollars for each table, how lavish!”

“Ivan’s making his father proud this time. The profit from this project alone is 300 million dollars. It seems like this project is massive!”

The Taylor family were talking about Ivan while Theodore seemed satisfied.

At this very moment, the private room’s door opened. Fiona and Andrew walked in with Selena and the rest.

“Fiona, aren’t you a big-shot, making us all wait for you!” Just as they entered the room, a relative sneered and said that loudly.

Fiona smiled in embarrassment and said, “I couldn’t help it, it was a little jammed on the way here!”

Cecilia took a look at the Gucci Selena was dressed in and said, “Tsk, Selena, you’re shameless, aren’t you? You actually had the guts to wear this counterfeit item out of the house. If it was me, I wouldn’t even dare to wear it. How embarrassing. If someone catches that it’s counterfeit, wouldn’t that be horrible?”

Fiona could not stand what she was hearing. She walked over and said, “Cecilia, don’t you dare. This is real. Even though our family is a little poor, this is the real deal!”

“Really? You’re just a little poor, and yet, you’re still capable of buying something that costs 100 to 200 thousand dollars? Why do I find that hard to believe? This isn’t anything ordinary!”

Cecilia continued arguing. “If you could afford that, then we should be able to buy clothes that cost about one or two million, shouldn’t we?”

“Don’t you dare say we can’t afford it!” Fiona replied, ‘At the very least, Jack is a veteran who served the country for five years so of course, he came back with some money. Maybe you don’t know this, but those who serve for one or two years will get 100 or 200 thousand dollars in compensation. Since Jack was gone for five years and achieved meritorious service, it’s no problem for the government to compensate him with about a million dollars!’

Jack was embarrassed. Thankfully he did not withdraw more money today, otherwise, his mother-in-law would be putting him on a pedestal as high as the sky. If she knew that his card could get him 100 billion dollars through a password-free transaction, she might be shocked to death.

“He achieved meritorious service?” Cecilia scrunched her brows together and started to believe Fiona.

After all, she did hear that the veterans who returned in the past two days came home with money. Some of them who achieved meritorious service, even minor ones, were awarded with a million dollars or so. It was possible.

“Of course!” Fiona replied right away but was a little hesitant about it. After all, Jack did not admit to it. However, for the sake of her reputation, she admitted it on Jack’s behalf.

“Really? Jack, what meritorious service did you achieve?” Old Master Taylor seemed interested in the conversation. He squinted and looked at Jack.

Everyone shifted their attention to Jack at this moment. They wanted to know what meritorious service he had achieved.

“Uh, I’ve achieved too many to remember. If I were to keep track of them, there must be at least one or two thousand awards!” Jack replied after briefly thinking about it.

Chapter 50

Old Master Taylor’s expression darkened as well. He said, “Jack, do you think I’m joking with you?”

“Jack, aren’t you a little too childish for doing this? How dare you not answer truthfully to a question from the old master!”

“That’s right, where is your respect for the old master? Do you not remember that if it wasn’t for the old master lending you a million dollars back then, your mother would be dead by now!”

A few of the members from the Taylor family began speaking to Jack angrily.

“Old Master, I’m telling the truth. Sigh, if you don’t believe me then forget it!” Jack shrugged. He did not want to elaborate any further.

If it was not for worrying that Selena might be bullied today, he would not have even come here.

“Wait, who’s this girl?” Cecilia initially wanted to cause trouble for Selena but did not expect Jack to have achieved meritorious service. Her clothes might be real so Cecilia had no choice but to give up. Soon after that, she realized that a stranger’s face was in the room.

“Oh, Cecilia, let me introduce her to everyone. This is my girlfriend, Xena Jackson. We’ve been dating for quite some time and are getting married soon!”

“Since grandpa invited everyone over here, I thought that I should bring her here and introduce her to everyone!”

Ben smiled shyly and seemed servile.

“Ben, that’s not nice of you, is it? This is a lunch for the Taylor family and you got an outsider over here, this...”

“At least Jack has a marriage certificate, the person you’ve brought here...” Cecilia said sarcastically while feeling excited internally.

“Xena is not an outsider. She’s already calling me mom so she’ll definitely marry my Ben soon!” Fiona butt into the conversation upon seeing that Cecilia was bullying Xena.

“Stop it, some people haven’t been to a place like this so isn’t it normal to want to experience it?” Another woman sneered on the side.

“Yes, it’s nothing for us, but for some people, it’s an achievement to bring his girlfriend here!” Cecilia said as she looked over at Ben.

Ben's expression darkened but he did not know how to defend himself. He glared at Jack who was standing next to him. It was this bastard's fault. If it was not for him getting his sister pregnant, would he be shamed this way today? If it was not for Jack, his family would be living lavishly today. Who knows, his sister might have been the family heir. At that point, who would have the guts to shame him this way?

"Xena, you have to think this through. Although Ben is a Taylor, you should know where he stands since he stays in a place like that!"

"You're pretty so it would be a waste to marry him. You might be poor for the rest of your life!"

After giving it some thought, Cecilia went over to stir trouble again.

Xena smiled shyly and replied, "Sister, you're too nice. Ben is nice to me and I like him for who he is. I haven't been thinking about anything else so as long as I'm happy, I'm good!"

"Cecilia, are you too free? What does our business have anything to do with you? You're just jealous because you don't have a boyfriend, right?" Ben could not stand it anymore. He finally rebutted Cecilia.

"What are you talking about? I have nothing to be jealous of. It's not that I don't have a boyfriend, it's just that I haven't found anyone who meets my standards. If I wanted to have one, I'd definitely find a man who's rich, powerful, and capable of protecting me. As for someone like you, tsk, anyone who's not an idiot wouldn't want you!" Cecilia said sarcastically as she crossed her arms in front of her chest. No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 51-55

Chapter 51

Selena frowned as she walked forward to question.

“Yeah, is this a major event, father? You’ve prepared so much champagne too!” Andrew also had on a puzzled look. He truly could not understand why such a grand celebration was being held at noon!

“There is indeed something worth celebrating for. Ivan is going to sign a huge business deal and it happens to be a huge one. Ivan mentioned that its net profit would be 300 million dollars! This amount is close to the profits we make in a year!” The old master smiled and said bluntly.

“Yes indeed, our Ivan has finally done us proud for once. He’s been able to finalize such a major business deal!” Theodore nodded before raising his head slightly. He seemed slightly proud.

“I’m not sure which family he made the deal with though?” Selena frowned and felt that this was quite unexpected as this unserious man was somehow able to do something so baffling?

“With the Wilson’s. He’s already on his way to sign it. We’ve already come to an agreement through the phone last night so I’m guessing he should be on his way back right now!” The old master looked at the time.

“Selena, the truth is that you’re quite remarkable back then. It’s too bad, if it wasn’t for...” A relative from the Taylor’s shot a glance at Jack, hinting at something.

“Uncle, I know. I chose this path and won’t ever regret it!” Selena smiled, looking somewhat melancholic.

It was just at this moment that the door opened once again and Ivan appeared in front of everyone.

“Ivan’s back, everyone clap!” Theodore cheered out immediately.

In that instant, everyone began clapping and the entire room instantly became lively!

“Ivan, you’ve arrived at such an opportune moment, everyone’s gathered here just for you!”

“Yes indeed, Young Master Ivan. Hurry up and announce the fruits of your labor, even the champagne is all ready!”

Several relatives immediately came forward to butter Ivan up.

Jack and Selena exchanged looks with each other. They could tell the purpose of the gathering today was to witness Ivan’s amazing results and to simply show off his outstanding abilities!

Ivan had a bitter look as he spoke in a depressed tone, “The contract was a bust. Something came up and Young Master Wilson immediately tore it apart!”

“What!”

Everyone gasped when they heard that statement! They were all ready for a celebration that even a banquet was fully prepared. However, Ivan had actually told them the entire ordeal was for nothing. Before Ivan went out, he was extremely confident and it seemed as if he was 100% certain the deal would follow through.

“What happened?” The old master’s expression dimmed as he slowly approached Ivan and questioned him.

At that moment, Ivan found himself tongue-tied. He actually had no idea how to respond. He could not possibly expose the horrific deed he and Micheal did last night, right? If he did, it was possible that the old master would have thought of murdering him.

Chapter 52

“How can Micheal act like that? So he just changed his mind today without reason after coming into an agreement yesterday!”

“Yes, how despicable indeed. He actually had the audacity to toy with such a major deal?”

Everyone from the Taylor family was extremely furious and started putting all the blame on Micheal. Upon noticing that no one was pointing fingers at him, Ivan felt relieved in his heart. Jack, who was standing on the side, frowned. He somehow felt this whole ordeal was not as simple.

It was not easy for Fiona to obtain such an opportunity, so it was only natural for her to take it. She immediately said, “Sigh, Young Master Ivan, our family has been waiting on your good news, you know. Here we thought you’d be able to bring in a business deal worth 300 million dollars to the Taylor family. We didn’t expect for it to all turn into nothing!”

The moment she made that statement, Ivan’s face looked incredibly cold and bitter. He had originally gotten Fiona and everyone here to brag about his amazing achievements, not expecting it to backfire on him.

However, he took a look at Jack at the side. He scoffed and said, “This is an oversight on my part because I never expected someone of such high status like Young Master Wilson to go back on his word!”

Ivan paused as he made that statement. He then pondered for a moment before continuing, “However, I’m stronger than others since I believe someone still doesn’t have a job ever since his return, right!? The truth is, it is people like these that have the hardest time finding a job!”

Cecelia immediately interjected and said, “Oh yeah, after veterans are discharged, they seem to have a very difficult time finding jobs that are suitable for them. So, could he be working his old job and delivering take out?”

Upon hearing that, plenty of the Taylors started laughing. In their eyes, delivering take out was viewed as a very low and disgraceful job.

“That’s right, I know plenty of veterans that can’t get a job after being discharged and end up working as bodyguards or security guards. Why don’t we do it this way? Come be a security guard in our company and I’ll pay you a monthly wage of 4000 dollars!”

After Ivan gave it some thought, he started chuckling and being condescending.

“4000 a month, that’s not bad!” The moment Fiona heard that, she told Jack, “Why don’t you think about it, Jack? You’re a big man and can’t possibly just stew at home and not do anything, right?”

“Forget about it. First of all, I am not in need of that kind of meager cash. Also, I don’t wish to be ordered around by certain people.” However, Jack seemed to have refused the offer immediately. When he witnessed the scene of Ivan bullying his own daughter upon his return yesterday, he would never work for Ivan.

If it was not for Ivan being part of the Taylors, and therefore Selena’s relative, Jack would have murdered him already.

All he wanted to do now was spend time with his wife and daughter and live a peaceful life.

“In no need of money?” Ivan laughed the moment he heard that. Even Fiona’s expression instantly turned bitter.

“You’re not in need of money? How comical. Don’t forget our agreement, don’t blame us when you’re unable to fork out that 30 million dollars when the time comes!”

Chapter 53

“There’s no need for you to care about my affairs. 4000 a month, that’s literally an insult to me!” Jack let out a subtle smile. The truth was that when he was about to get discharged, it was uncertain just how many people had secretly contacted him and offered him an astronomical amount of money. However, he had turned them all down.

As such, it was impossible for Ivan's offer of four thousand dollars to do his bidding to work as the amount was merely an insult to him.

"Yes, yes, yes. You're the boss, you've contributed something major for the country so they must have offered you a huge sum of money, right? From the looks of things, we're blind to worry about you!" Ivan spoke in a sinister tone.

Jack ignored him and instead, shifted his focus on the champagne on the table. He then said, "Old Master Taylor, are we not celebrating anymore? If we don't eat now, the food's going to get cold!"

The corner of Old Master Taylor's mouth twitched violently as Jack did not hold any restraint as he spoke. He was saying things that he should not just to intentionally embarrass them even though today was planned as a celebration.

"I think you haven't seen food this delicious in a really long time now. You should be drooling now even looking at it, right?" Cecelia immediately rolled her eyes at Jack before coldly making that statement.

"Let's eat since the food's already served. Just pretend this is a normal gathering now!" Old Master Taylor helplessly waved his hand. He then took a look at Ivan and said, "Ivan, remember that next time before any agreements are signed, ignore all verbal agreements made. There is always a possibility that the other party will back out of it at any time. Do you understand? Therefore, don't speak so confidently next time!"

Ivan's expression turned bitter, however, he was only able to roll with the punches and smile awkwardly. He said, "I understand, grandpa. Please, join us too!"

Finally, everyone sat down and began eating. Xena seemed to be eating cautiously. She originally thought that since her own appearance was not bad, the Taylor family might be happier that she tagged along. She had not expected that she would instead be looked down and unacknowledged.

“Young Master Ivan, that Jack fellow was acting quite rashly earlier. Why don’t we think of a way to humiliate him?” While they ate, a middle-aged man from the Taylor family sat next to Ivan and spoke up.

“Really now? Do you have a plan?” After Ivan heard it, he was instantly interested.

“Young Master Ivan, don’t we have quite a few alcoholics here? Why don’t we get him drunk and he’ll humiliate himself then, right? It would be much better if he’s picking fights irrationally while drunk!” The man chuckled as he said that.

“Alright!” Ivan was instantly delighted. He had always gone out for drinks and his alcohol tolerance was pretty good. Moreover, if some members of the Taylor family could listen to him and drink with Jack, it would be a miracle for him to not become drunk under his command!

After a brief moment, that middle-aged man approached Jack and said with a smile, “You’re Jack, right? Honestly, when you married Selena back then, I didn’t get a chance to drink with you as your elder. So, let’s raise a toast to you being a war hero as it’s completely unrelated to whether you’re part of the Taylor family or not!”

Since he mentioned he was an elder, Jack could not refuse him. All he could do was stand up and pour himself a drink before saying, “You’re too kind. We’re all citizens of Daxia and it’s our duty to defend our land! As a form of respect, I’ll drink to you first!”

The man was delighted when he noticed Jack chug the glass of alcohol down so casually. After that, he finished his drink then said, “Oh, how I can’t see the joy of being a soldier. Your alcohol tolerance is not bad. Come on now, let’s drink one more. This one, we’ll think of it as a blessing to you and Selena. Naturally, I hope that you can fork out 30 million dollars on Old Master Taylor’s seventieth birthday in order to prove that you’re worthy of our Selena!”

Chapter 54

The first toast was to respect Jack’s contribution in defending the country. The second was a blessing to Jack and Selena. These reasons made Jack unable to refuse the drinks. Not to mention, the person was an elderly. If Jack refused his offer, he would obviously seem unreasonable. Hence, all Jack could do was

smile and accept every toast given to him as they drank.

The only thing was, Jack had not expected that even after three consecutive toasts, the man in front of him would not leave as another man came over with more alcohol. Jack could not help but frown as he was starting to find the entire ordeal weird. These people usually looked down on him and now they were all trying to drink with him? Hence, it seemed peculiar and it was obvious that they were trying to get him drunk. However, as much as they tried to scheme against him, he never took it to heart.

The five years he spent in harrowing, war-torn conditions made his body extremely fit. Adding on to that fact that he had a pretty peculiar encounter, it would be impossible for these people to actually get him drunk.

After that, more people continuously came by. Jack smiled at them politely, then made small talk with them before chugging down all of the alcohol in his glass. He looked very impressive. After drinking seven to eight glasses of red wine, Selena who was watching from the side started to panic slightly. After Jack got seated once again, she instinctively tugged Jack's shirt gently.

"Don't you know how to refuse? It's fine to drink a little less. You drank so much so fast. What will you do if you get drunk?" Selena lowered her voice and reminded him in a soft tone.

Jack's heart felt warm after hearing her statement. He never expected that Selena would actually care for him so much. Besides, such a wife would be very difficult to find. In order to save his pride, she intentionally spoke in a softer tone so no one else could hear.

"Don't worry, my alcohol tolerance isn't that bad. Besides, you can take a look and see that basically everyone that came over are elders. Their excuses would make even you unable to refuse. It's actually quite kind of them to not string you along and ask you to drink with them!" Jack also lowered his voice and replied in a soft tone, placing his hand over his mouth.

"This happens to be red wine. Although it tastes good, the rush later can be quite overwhelming. It's easy to get drunk so be careful!"

Selena also realized the excuses they had given Jack earlier were truly difficult to refuse. If he deliberately refused any of them, those elders would say that Jack looked down on them and it would be quite a complicated ordeal to manage after that. The only thing was, how could she not worry with the way Jack was drinking?

Ivan had a wide smile as he walked over with a glass of alcohol in his hand at that moment.

After Jack looked at him, he frowned and said, "Young Master Ivan, you wouldn't also want to drink with me now, would you? I happened to be the one that broke your arm though!"

The edge of Ivan's mouth twitched violently when he heard that statement.

However, he controlled his emotions and said with a smile, "That was all a misunderstanding. I was actually playing with Kylie back then. I didn't expect you to misunderstand!"

After he finished saying that, he added, "No matter what, Selena is still my cousin and you should call me cousin as well. Although I feel like you're not capable of anything, but it's not easy to survive through the fields of battle and return. With that, allow me to raise you a toast!"

After saying that, Ivan immediately chugged his glass dry. He then said, "Jack, you wouldn't deny me that honor now, would you?"

"How kind. Young Master Ivan giving me a toast would, without a doubt, be my honor. Don't mind if I do!" Jack chuckled as he immediately chugged the alcohol in his glass down.

"Hah Great! Now we're talking! I love making connections with people. What do you say we drink three shots?"

One of Ivan's hands was still in a cast, but he still took a bottle of red wine and poured it into two of the empty glasses.

“This isn’t such a good idea now, your injuries haven’t fully recovered yet. Young Master Ivan, it’s best for you to not drink that much!” Jack pretended to be tipsy as he gently shook his head and advised him.

Chapter 55

Upon noticing that Jack had finally started to refuse a drink and was even shaking his head, Ivan felt delighted in his heart. Judging from the look of things, it seemed Jack might be reaching his limit. He immediately said, “It’s fine, it’s fine. Come on now, today is a happy day and we should all drink three shots!”

“Fine then!” Jack pretended as if he was in a tough spot but still drank all of the alcohol slowly.

At this moment, Jack had already drank more than ten glasses in a row as even the few elders and Ivan were feeling slightly tipsy. However, they all thought that Jack should be close to getting drunk by now.

“Come on guys, we haven’t had a drink together in a very long time now, let’s all drink!” Ivan raised his glass and spoke to everyone present.

He scoffed in his heart that under a situation where everyone was drinking, Jack would have no way to refuse and would be forced to drink.

“Alright, let’s all drink. Let’s drink for our Taylor Group’s business to grow stronger!” Old Master Taylor smiled as he said that.

“Cheers!” Ivan immediately chugged the alcohol down.

Not long after he was done drinking, Ivan signaled the others to take turns making Jack drink. He was interested to see how long Jack could keep up. Unfortunately for him, although Jack was not bold enough to refuse and seemed very close to getting drunk, he was still drinking glass after glass. On the other hand, it was the few elders that were completely flustered from drinking. Even their speech

seemed to slur. Two of them even rushed to the washroom to puke not long after.

Ivan was completely furious as he went ahead to drink a few more glasses with Jack. However, he ended up completely drunk while Jack was still fine.

“Goddammit, what kind of a monster is this brat to have such a high alcohol tolerance?” A completely wasted man approached Ivan and commented with a frown.

“I told you that a veteran’s alcohol tolerance would be impressive but this, isn’t this a little too insane? The few of us were taking turns drinking with him and are still unable to get him drunk!”

Ivan had a bitter look on his face and was completely speechless.

It was at this moment that Tanya Drake, who had just finished a meal with her best friends, walked by the room. She heard how lively it was inside and decided to casually take a peek.

With a glance, she noticed that Jack was actually drinking with the Taylor family.

“What’s wrong? Let’s go, Tanya. You wouldn’t have actually been charmed by that handsome man inside now, would you?” One of the young ladies teased.

“You guys go on ahead, I’m not joining you guys for the shopping trip. There’s someone I know inside and I have something to do!” Tanya immediately said with a smile.

“Alright then, we’ll hang out some other day!” The other girls nodded and left soon after.

Tanya immediately pushed the door open and entered the room. She said, “Oh wow. I was just talking about how lively it was inside, it turned out to be the Taylor family!”

“Who are you? We, the Taylor family, are having a meal here. What is a stranger doing here?” Ivan was already holding onto the frustrations in his heart. In his drunken state, he yelled out immediately without even taking a closer look.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 56-60

Chapter 56

“I’m a stranger? Heh, I’ll leave then!” Tanya was stunned for a moment before chuckling out loud as she turned around and was getting ready to leave.

Old Master Taylor could recognize who she was at a glance and immediately gasped. This happened to be the daughter of the wealthiest man in Eastfield. Her family’s power was terrifyingly immense. It was uncertain just how many people wished to grovel to their family. However, it seemed such opportunity was incredibly rare.

They, as a third class aristocratic family, were even more desperate to butter up to them. The only thing was that there was never such opportunity to do so. They did not expect Tanya to actually show up in front of them. The only thing was that his own grandson looked like a mess to have actually said something like that without being afraid of offending that person.

“Drake-Miss Tanya...” Old Master Taylor was quite nervous as he stuttered.

“Ivan, what on Earth are you spouting? That happens to be Miss Drake. Are you not going to hurry up and apologize?” Even Theodore was startled as he immediately chastised Ivan.

Originally in a drunken stupor, Ivan was completely terrified when he heard that statement. Immediately, he stood up frantically, rushed over, and extended his arm. He said, “I’m sorry, sorry. Sigh, I didn’t expect you to be Miss Drake. This is truly a surprise. What I mean to say is, I didn’t expect a woman of such high status like Miss Drake to show up in a place like this...”

Ivan had no idea how to apologize as he extended his arm, intending to shake the other person’s hand.

However, Miss Tanya had both hands behind her back and completely ignored Ivan. She took a glance at Old Master Taylor and said, "Old Master Taylor, am I welcomed here?"

"Welcome, welcome. Of course you're welcomed!" Old Master Taylor frantically said, "Waiter, add another set of cutlery. Please sit here, Miss Drake!"

With a smile, Miss Drake said, "No need for the trouble. Just rice is fine as I've just finished a meal next door earlier with my best friends. While passing through, I noticed a familiar face here and came by to have a look!"

"Miss Drake! Unexpectedly, we meet again!" Fiona was behaving extremely rashly as she frantically came forward while chuckling out loud. It seemed like she was buttering up to her.

Tanya status was unimaginably high and she had even handed her a name card last night. If she was able to speak a little more with Tanya, the Taylor family would have to respect her even more. However, she felt slightly anxious. She was afraid that Miss Drake might ignore her and if that happened, she would just be embarrassing herself.

"Indeed, aunty. I noticed you guys here so I decided to come in and take a look!" Tanya smiled calmly as that single statement made everyone gasp. So, was the familiar face Tanya was talking about actually Fiona and the others? When did Fiona and her family even become the familiar faces Tanya mentioned? Although Tanya also knew about Old Master Taylor, she would never address him as a 'familiar face'.

"Young Master Ivan, that apology of yours seemed a little insincere. I think you should at least drink an entire bottle of red wine... Besides, that exclamation you made earlier sounded louder than usual!" At this moment, Jack unexpectedly chuckled before lazily commenting on his previous statement.

The corners of Ivan's mouth twitched violently. He was already dizzy from drinking so how could he possibly drink an entire bottle of red wine by himself? This brat was intentionally trying to stir up trouble!

What was even more unbelievable was that Miss Tanya was actually covering her tiny mouth in shock. She then said, "If you're able to finish this entire bottle of red wine, that would prove the sincerity of your apology."

Old Master Taylor was also speechless for a moment. However, since Miss Tanya had spoken, if they did not do what she asked, it would be very disrespectful to her. If she held a grudge in her heart due to this, it would seem that their Taylor family would not even be able to dream about expanding in Eastfield ever again.

"What are you still dawdling there for, Ivan? Show your sincerity!" Upon noticing the bitter look on Ivan's face, Old Master Taylor was put in a tough spot and immediately reminded him.

"Alright, it wasn't my intention to offend you earlier. I will chug this bottle dry as an apology!" Ivan grabbed a bottle of red wine and immediately poured it down his throat.

When he was halfway through drinking it, he felt slightly uncomfortable. However, he had no choice but to grit his teeth and forcefully finish the entire bottle. Hatred brewed in his heart. That cursed Jack, why did he have to randomly seek out trouble. The main point was that Miss Tanya had actually listened to him. Moreover, what made him even more speechless was that it was Miss Tanya who ruined his schemes last night. If it was not for her, he would have successfully signed the agreement and returned with pride to show off how capable he was. Unfortunately...

After he had finished drinking, Ivan could no longer keep it together as he immediately felt dizzy. He swayed from left to right as he took a few steps forward before collapsing onto the ground and puking.

Old Master Taylor had an extremely bitter look upon witnessing this scene. He secretly scolded Ivan for being too weak. If he had to puke, he could have waited until after Miss Tanya had left. How embarrassing was it to act in such a way in front of others. Would there even be a chance for both families to work together in the future? In the future, Ivan would be the lord of the household. Maintaining his image was important.

"That's right, what are you guys celebrating? I noticed people drinking champagne over there!" Miss Tanya merely glanced at Ivan on the ground before questioning Old Master Taylor.

“Well, the truth is that it’s nothing major. We... We were...” Old Master Taylor frowned and was unsure what to say.

Suddenly, he noticed Jack and decided to grit his teeth before saying, “We are here to welcome Jack back home. Besides, he returned from the battlefield and made the country proud, right?”

“Indeed, this is something worthy of celebrating!” Tanya nodded, then immediately told Jack, “Oh right, Jack, the Drake family happens to be looking for a bodyguard. I noticed you’ve been discharged so you should be pretty impressive now, right? You just came back and don’t have a job now, right? I’m not sure but would you be interested in working as a bodyguard for the Drake family?”

The instant Fiona heard her say that, she was ecstatic and said frantically, “Of course, of course he’s interested. I heard the lowest wage for the Drake family’s bodyguards is around twenty to thirty thousand dollars and for those who are considered skilled, their wages would go up to more than 100 thousand, right?”

“Don’t worry, aunty. If Jack comes over, his wages will be up for him to decide. We’re just afraid that he won’t be willing to come over!” Tanya knew Jack was an impressive man since her own father had repeatedly told her to get closer and help him no matter what. It seemed this man’s relationship with the God of War was an unusual one.

“Coming, coming, coming! Of course, he’d be willing to come, what is there to be unwilling of? It’s uncertain just how many people desperately want to be a bodyguard for your family!” Fiona was beaming. This was because if Jack was not an idiot, he would definitely not let go of such an opportunity!

After she was done speaking, she pulled Jack aside and whispered, “She said it’s up to you to decide on the wages. Don’t you dare ask for a small amount. If you’re embarrassed to ask for 100 thousand dollars, at the very least, ask for fifty to eighty thousand!”

Jack had the cold sweats since his mother-in-law was energetic at the sheer mention of money.

Chapter 58

“No way, is he mad? Isn't he threatening Miss Tanya right now?”

“Yeah, if that isn't a threat then what is? If his wife isn't assigned a job, he won't work as their bodyguard? What a joke, it was as if she's begging him to be their bodyguard!”

“Oh my god, this is too foolish. Miss Tanya was taking the fact he had contributed to the country into account and looking out for him. Because of this, she wanted him to work as the Drake family's bodyguard. It's unknown just how many people desperately want to work under that position and yet, he has the audacity to spout such nonsense!”

“The main point is that Miss Tanya even offered for him to name his own price. This alone shows just how much respect he's being given!”

All the Taylor family relatives gasped after hearing what Jack said and silently began discussing among themselves.

“Good lord, what if he offended Miss Tanya and the Drake family? If that happens, would they pin the blame on our Taylor family as well since he is the Taylor family's son-in-law!”

No one knew who said that.

Old Master Taylor was also startled after hearing that statement. It was a fair point though. If Jack offended the Drake family, his death would have very little impact on them as the Taylor family had never taken him seriously.

However, this brat happened to be Selena's husband. From the perspective of others, he happened to be their son-in-law. If Miss Tanya were to put blame on the Taylor family due to troubles this brat had caused, that would be disastrous.

He frantically came forward and smiled toward Tanya as he said, "Miss Tanya, this brat happened to have a little too much to drink and was spouting nonsense. Please don't take it to heart. Thank you for your kind gesture, Miss Tanya. The thing is, this brat might've only been an underling while he was in the army. He isn't used to formalities, so it seems like it would be very difficult for him to adapt to being a bodyguard for the Drake family."

They never expected Jack's statement to make Miss Tanya very excited as she wanted nothing more than to please Jack immediately as it also meant buttering up to Lana, one of the Gods of War.

Her initial statement was meant to test Jack. She assumed that Jack would not agree to it but had not expected that he would actually give her such an opportunity.

"What nonsense are you talking about, Jack? Miss Tanya has offered you such a great job so you should behave and do it well. Don't bring Miss Tanya trouble!" Even Selena was startled as she immediately said that after snapping out of her shock.

"No way, I'll only agree to it if you want to work there. If you don't, I won't work as well. The truth is that I'm not even willing to work anyway!" Jack immediately said that with a cold expression.

Everyone felt like passing out. This guy was clearly stupid. His current state would require him to desperately get a job to support the family's expenses. Did he not know that his family was extremely poor? How could he still act so arrogantly at this moment?

"Sure! Absolutely!" Miss Tanya kept her excitement hidden as she walked forward and told Selena, "Miss Selena, I remembered that you're quite talented in management. Let's put it this way, we have a huge project that will launch soon so you can come over and be our project manager, what say you? The wages will be fifty-no, one million per month, how about that? There'll be a year-end bonus too!"

"A million!" Fiona and Andrew looked at each other and gasped. Even if she was project manager, it was already pretty impressive to make more than ten thousand dollars a month. They did not expect Miss Tanya would make such a high offer.

“Sis, are you not gonna hurry and thank Miss Tanya? Where else would you find such an amazing job?” Ben was afraid she would go back on her word and immediately reminded her.

“Yeah, dear daughter, hurry up and agree now. Do you understand?”

Chapter 59

Fiona was extremely ecstatic since such a high wage was something she completely had never expected. Would that mean, after a few months, they would be able to afford a mansion?

“This... Isn’t this a little too high?” Selena was also quite emotional as she was stunned for a moment.

Back then, after she was exiled from the Taylor family, she ran into continuous stumbles as she had a very difficult time finding a job. Even when she wanted to look for an agent to search for jobs, not a single person dared to take her in. Now, however, Miss Tanya actually tossed her a lifeline. The main point was, would Ivan even dare to stir up trouble with the Drake family after Miss Tanya immediately offered her a job? It was obvious that would be very unlikely to happen.

Jack frowned as he secretly muttered in his heart that the Drake family was actually quite talented in snooping. Since they were most likely trying to butter up to him because they offered Selena such a good job. Although Jack disliked money, as long as his wife was happy and at peace, he would be very happy.

“Honey, it all depends if you’re willing or not. If you’re not then just refuse it. Besides, we’re not in need of money!” Jack shrugged his shoulders then casually mentioned that.

It was true that he was in no need of money. Since it would only take a single word from him and the entire Eastfield would be his. The only thing was, he currently had no intention of flaunting his status.

The entire Taylor family had nearly passed out. In no need of money? Selena was actually picking up

trash to sell back then and he actually could say that they were in no need of money.

“Good lord, such heavy words you have! You’ve merely contributed to a minor cause anyway so your prize money is only slightly more than a million dollars, right? With so little money and you dare say you’re in no need of money? If you want a better home in the capital, you might not even be able to afford a three-bedroom, one living room home!” Cecelia could no longer watch his pretentiousness as she directly insulted him.

“Yeah, that daughter of his, she was already able to be enrolled in a kindergarten last year but she hasn’t been able to even till now and it’s all because of them not having money. That happens to be the little hard-earned money he made by risking his life for five years. If he could boast that much, it seems he’s never seen enough money yet since a million dollars were enough to satisfy him already!” Another member of the Taylor family could not hold back from mocking him.

“I’m willing, why wouldn’t I be? I’ve long been yearning for a job now. The thing is, the wage is a little too high and I’m a little worried that I’m unable to meet the work standards and disappoint you!” Selena’s heart was slightly emotional and was a little anxious as well as she frantically said that.

“Miss Selena, don’t you worry. I have faith in your abilities. We’ve done our research about you, the two years you were in the Taylor family and when you were the general manager, the results of the company were quite impressive! However, after another person was appointed in these five years, it seems to be going downhill slightly!”

Tanya smiled and bluntly said, “Or else, I wouldn’t have so casually offered my price, right?” It seemed as if Jack was suspicious of something as Tanya intentionally explained.

Chapter 60

“Thank you Miss Tanya for your praises. This toast is my respect to you!” Selena was slightly anxious in her heart. A monthly wage of a million dollars, such a job would be extremely hard to find. It seemed not even the monthly wage of a general manager would come close to that.

“You’re too kind! To a happy collaboration then!” Tanya did not act pridefully as she walked over and

poured herself some red wine then gently bumped her wine glass with Selena's before drinking.

"Jack, now that your wife had agreed to come work with us, you can't go back on your words now, name your price?" Tanya was beaming as she was praying in her heart if her father knew she had hired Jack as their bodyguard, it would be uncertain just how happy he would be.

Everyone's faces were sweating. Since not only was Miss Tanya not infuriated after hearing Jack's outrageous statement, she seemed very keen on having Jack be a part of their Drake family and making him a bodyguard.

Jack let out a bitter laugh and said, "Well, I have no choice now and it seems, I have to agree to it then!" As he was saying that, Jack paused then said, "But, I have a condition. Regarding the wages, I can be paid a little less, besides, I don't lack money. However, as for the hours, I require my freedom. That meant I'll only come to work when I have the time to and if something is up, I have to head out and attend to it, right!"

Tanya's expression seemed peculiar. How was this working, was this not called living like a master?

"What on Earth are you thinking, Jack? You are there to be a bodyguard, you're working for people so you should abide by their terms. How could you leave whenever you feel like it?" Fiona was extremely furious. This bastard had finally found an excellent job and he was being very unreasonable now.

Moreover, he even mentioned that he could be paid a little less. He was completely lacking integrity now. However, since this trash was unworthy of being her son-in-law and since she was able to exile him from the Taylor family on the old master's seventieth birthday. So, what was there to worry about anyway.

"Son, this is such a good opportunity so you should work well now. Do you understand?" Joan too came forward to advise him.

"Sure. However, if any major incidents require your help, you'll have to arrive immediately whenever

you're called. Can you do that?" They never expected Miss Tanya had actually agreed to him once more.

Theodore and the others were completely baffled. Has Miss Tanya gone mad? How could she actually agree to such terms? Was their Drake family in such desperate need of bodyguards?

"Now, you can talk about the amount you desire for your wages, right? You mentioned earlier, you want to be paid a little less, so don't go asking for too much now!" Miss Tanya was chuckling. She looked extremely adorable.

"Yeah, alright then, just twenty million dollars! Twenty million dollars per month! Any amount lesser than that, you can forget about it!" Jack was silent for a moment then raised two fingers.

"Are you insane, Jack? Is Miss Tanya joking with you now?" A relative of the Taylor family immediately scolded him. This guy was blatantly throwing a fit. How can a bodyguard ask for twenty million a month, not to mention, come to work whenever he was free? Was he not afraid of offending Miss Tanya? What if she grew furious then? No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 61-65

Chapter 61

Although the three other bodyguards did not speak a word, their expressions dimmed. Was this not an insult to them?

"What on Earth are you talking about?" Selena was also extremely startled by it. Miss Tanya was being very nice but time and time again Jack was blatantly testing her limits.

A monthly wage of twenty million dollars on top of leaving the Drake family whenever he wanted? How would that be possible? If the Drake family master had learned about it, he would immediately be driven insane by Jack's madness.

"Jack, are you mad from all that thinking about money? Didn't you want a much lesser wage? So it

seems, your much lesser wage is twenty million dollars per month! This is the first time I have ever seen a bodyguard's wage this high!" Cecelia was saying that with a sinister tone.

This time, was this guy not intentionally offending Miss Tanya now? It would be absurd for Miss Tanya to not be furious this time. It was obvious now that Miss Tanya's bodyguards were all furious. It seemed this time, the guy would have no choice but to escape.

Miss Tanya on the other hand was frowning on the side as in her heart she felt quite surprised. If this guy was a veteran King of War or an officer, it would be very reasonable to ask for such a price. However, was he really that impressive? Besides, there were also clear distinctions to powerful people on the battlefield.

"Pardon, Miss Tanya, this Jack fellow had too much to drink earlier, he might possibly be drunk now!" Old Master Taylor was also startled by Jack. He was afraid of Jack indirectly bringing trouble to their Taylor family. So, he explained, "I hope Miss Tanya won't blame him. Also, although he might be married to Selena, he's not close to us."

"Yes, yes, yes! He's only a son-in-law, an outsider!" The other members of the Taylor family also frantically explained. It would mean a world of trouble to them if Miss Tanya decided to pin the blame on them.

"This price I am offering is actually quite low already. Usually, when people approached me, I would name my price in the billions. I've lowered my price from the billions to millions so you should be happy, Miss Tanya!" Jack actually once again boldly made such a statement.

Once again, the Taylor family were all speechless. He even mentioned he had lowered the price to twenty million dollars. Could there possibly even be someone who would offer twenty billion dollars and be successful in hiring him? Unless he was the God of War but obviously he certainly was not!

"Alright then, you and Miss Selena can come over to work tomorrow morning!" Miss Tanya had only hesitated for a moment before immediately agreeing to it. She felt that based on Jack's tone, he did not sound like he was lying. Even if he was slightly boasting, he would without a doubt still be a very powerful man.

Besides, her own father had witnessed him being in the same private jet with the God of War, Lana when they returned.

“Deal!” Jack calmly smiled and nodded.

“We didn’t mishear it right, Miss Tanya? He didn’t mention twenty thousand, it was twenty million though!” A bodyguard initially was waiting for Miss Tanya’s orders to immediately beat Jack to a pulp but he never expected Miss Tanya to actually agree to it.

“Miss Tanya, it’s twenty million though. Not even the commander or the assistant commander would be paid this much now, right?” Another bodyguard immediately protested. He was wondering if he was dreaming.

“Now, there is one with this high of a price!” Jack chuckled calmly and said that with a carefree attitude.

Chapter 62

That single statement Jack made, almost caused a few bodyguards to pass out. This guy was too unreasonable. Was this not blatantly insulting them?

“Don’t worry. I’m not a fool and I have faith in his abilities! If he can survive on the battlefield for five years, he will without a doubt have his uses!” Miss Tanya was clear in her heart and she could not possibly tell them it was all to butter up to the God of War, hence his high price offer. Hence, she forced an explanation.

“Yes, yes, yes! Miss Tanya, your judgment is impeccable!” Fiona was incredibly ecstatic in her heart. If Jack’s monthly wage was twenty million dollars, does that mean he would make two hundred and forty million a year? If that was the case and if Jack worked for a lifetime then, well, anyone would be excited with just that thought.

“Miss Tanya, don’t you worry, I’m sure my brother-in-law won’t disappoint you!” Ben was so excited, he did not know what to say as he immediately spoke out.

“Brother-in-law?” Jack turned his head to look at him as he thought this change in attitude was too drastic now. Before they came, he wanted to beat him up, how come now he would call him his brother-in-law?

Ben nervously laughed and said, “You’re my sister’s husband so, if you’re not my brother-in-law then who could you be?”

“Yeah, of course, you’re his brother-in-law now!” Fiona delightfully said, “My dear son-in-law, I have faith in your abilities and you will work well in the Drake family and forge a career for yourself!”

Jack’s eyes narrowed as that son-in-law remark came too suddenly.

“Cough! Cough! Mom, didn’t you mention that if I didn’t cough up that ten million to you, you won’t acknowledge my status?” Jack let out two dry coughs then intentionally said that.

Fiona’s face immediately blushed as she frantically said, “Sigh, your monthly wage is already twenty million, it’s impossible you can’t give me that ten million now, right?”

“Miss Tanya, are you serious?” Even Old Master Taylor was startled and was wondering if this was a hallucination. Although Jack had spent five years on the battlefield, it was uncertain how he survived. A monthly wage of twenty million was too terrifying let alone, it was only for a bodyguard.

“I, Tanya Drake will never go back on my word! You guys can cease your worries for that!” Miss Tanya spoke confidently.

“Well, shouldn’t you ask your father, Miss Tanya?” Jack asked.

“Nope, just come to work tomorrow! I’ll take my leave first and I won’t disturb you guys from drinking now!” Tanya waved her hand and left soon after along with her lackeys.

After Tanya had left for quite some time, everyone here seemingly was still caught in their dreamy daze.

“Jack, tomorrow, you and Selena have to head to work earlier. Don’t be late now, do you understand?” Fiona reminded them while chuckling.

“Mom, am I dreaming? I’m only a project manager and my monthly wage is a million on top of year-end bonuses!”

“He is a bodyguard and his monthly wage is twenty million while he can leave whenever he wants to and he doesn’t have to abide by the working hours?”

Chapter 63

Selena truly did not know how to react as she was unsure exactly what was going on.

“Yeah, it’s real. Miss Tanya actually said it herself earlier!” Fiona felt quite surreal toward such overwhelming emotion of surprise.

“What right does he have to get such a high wage?” Cecelia had a bitter look on her face. However, after a much deeper thought, she suddenly thought about something and started laughing. She said, “I know now. Jack, Miss Tanya must be taking you for a fool and was joking with you!”

“Impossible. Miss Tanya said it earlier that they can come to work tomorrow so how could that be a joke?” Fiona immediately argued.

“Just think about it, those other bodyguards they have, even if they are commanders, they won’t be

paid that much so, what right does he have to get such a high pay? Besides, Selena is working as a manager and her monthly wage of million dollars could somewhat make sense. Jack on the other hand, he's merely just a bodyguard, so how can that twenty million monthly wage even be logical?"

Cecelia bluntly said, "That was because Jack was intentionally toying with Miss Tanya and she happened to pretend to agree just to toy back with him. If you don't believe me, when Jack arrives at the Drake family home, perhaps he wouldn't even be able to enter its main gate!"

"Yeah, I also think it's impossible!" Another woman from the Taylor family nodded and said, "After Cecelia broke it down like that, I feel like that is a huge possibility that she was merely toying with him because he toyed with her first!"

Jack could not be bothered by them as he merely calmly said, "I'm afraid, she isn't bold enough to toy with me!"

Selena on the other hand was frowning on the side. She could not understand just how exactly did Jack get such a high salary. Were they not usually recruiting a whole bunch of veterans like him? There were plenty of people who would be quite satisfied upon getting a good security guard or bodyguard job. Jack's job on the other end though...

"Daddy, how much is twenty million a month? Is that a lot?" At this moment, Kylie who had been playing by the side during dinner ran over. She grabbed onto Jack's pants with her slender little hands as she raised her head to look up at him.

Upon staring at that little child's adorable expression, Jack's heart melted. He thought that the pain and suffering he endured for the last five years was worth it at this moment. He defended a country for five years and now, all he wanted was to peacefully keep her wife and daughter safe!

"Not that much, but it's enough to enroll Kylie into the best kindergarten and buy all kinds of toys for Kylie!" After he carried Kylie up, he could not help himself but give Kylie's cheeks a kiss. That felt extremely warm.

“Really? So I’ll have plenty of toys soon!” After Kylie heard that, her pair of beautiful eyes were glimmering with excitement.

Selena, who was watching this scene from the side, lamented. Was the five years of suffering finally over? Was their family finally able to amount to something good? This would not be a dream, right!

Old Master Taylor was frowning instead as he got lost in deep contemplation. Was Miss Tanya joking, since it happened to be twenty million a month for that Jack fellow. Was that guy truly worth that much? Not to mention, would the master of the Drake family even agree to it? Besides, as wealthy as the Drake family was, they would not waste money to such an extent!

After some thought, he looked at Ivan who had been helped and appeared collapsed on the table. He was starting to suspect if he made a mistake for having Selena’s family exiled from the Taylor family.

“Come on now, let us all continue drinking. Let’s all have one regardless if Jack’s job was real or not but I believe Selena’s job is real. It’s a good thing for Selena being able to enter the Drake family and work for them!” Old Master Taylor poured half a glass of red wine for himself, raised it and smiled at Selena before saying, “Selena, next time you will be the project manager and if there’s any good projects out there that require a collaboration, remember to look out for our Taylor family!”

“What are you talking about, Grandpa? I am still a member of the Taylor family and I bleed the same blood as the Taylor family. So if there are any good projects that can be collaborated, naturally, I will think about our Taylor family!” Selena let out an awkward laugh as she did not blame the old master. Since, the old master used to spoil her a lot back then. Unfortunately, she was too rebellious five years ago and disappointed the old master.

Chapter 64

“Right, no matter what, Selena’s strengths are acknowledged by the Drake family. Besides, Miss Tanya had mentioned it earlier, Selena would be handling a huge project but it’s unsure what project that would be. If she could look out for our Taylor family, that’ll be excellent!” Andrew spoke while chuckling since this was such a huge opportunity!

The Taylor family had always wanted to build connections with the Drake family but they never got the chance to. Now however, they actually had someone that could directly be involved with the Drake family's business by being a project manager, this was literally an extremely amazing opportunity for their Taylor family!

"No, no, no. Selena, you can immediately look out for the Taylor family the moment you start, it would be bad if the Drake family knew about it. Besides, you'd just come over so you'll have to prove your worth when you start working and gain the Drake family's trust then build upon that relationship. Wait till there's an opportunity to look out for our Taylor family in future. You have to think of a way to have them notice and value your strengths. Only then, when you look out for our Taylor family, they will have nothing to say!" After Old Master Taylor carefully pondered about it, he advised her.

The business for the Taylor family within these two years have gone downhill and it was getting worse by the year. This made Old Master Taylor frantic.

Jack who was listening at the side had no idea how to react. It was obvious that the Taylor family had no idea that the main purpose for Miss Taylor was only to get him to work for them. Would they be unable to hire a capable manager with the wealth they had?

...

After Miss Tanya left, she swiftly drove back to the Drake family home.

When those bodyguards returned to the Drake family home, they were all obviously incredibly furious. Since they understood Miss Tanya's temperament and were very honorable. If she had made a promise to anyone, she would honor her promise. Even if Master Drake objected to it after the fact, it would be futile. Miss Tanya was that stubborn. If she had decided on something, it would be very difficult to change her mind.

"Father, let me tell you a good news!" Tanya entered the mansion's lobby while placing both arms behind her back as she gleefully said that.

“Seeing just how happy you are, what good news could this be?” James asked with a smile.

“Jack White, I got him in. He’s willing to be our family’s bodyguard!” After Miss Tanya was done speaking, she looked at Timothy who was sipping tea on the side then continued with a smug attitude, “What do you think, brother? Isn’t what I, your sister did extremely earth shattering?”

The moment James heard that statement, he was shocked as he said, “No way, right? You actually got him in? If he actually returned with the God of War, had a good relationship with her then he should at least be King of War. Even by a little difference, he should at least be a marshal though. A man like this, is willing to be your bodyguard?”

With that being said, Timothy was stunned before saying, “I’ve heard that a returning marshal would have a billion whereas ten billion for those who are more impressive as their prize money. The King of War however would at the very least get a few hundred billion dollars. There were plenty of people who wanted to employ their powers but those people would not so easily agree to the employment!”

Tanya frowned when she heard that as she said, “Really? I didn’t expect you to know even that detail, Brother. However, Grandfather had mentioned that the Jack fellow wouldn’t be that simple, so I got lucky today and I ran into his entire family. Hence, I got him in.”

“He’d agree to a monthly wage of a few hundred thousand dollars as a bodyguard? Tanya, have you made a mistake and found the wrong person? Are you sure that person is Jack White? The Jack White that father was talking about?” Timothy was seemingly unconvinced. Since, the Drake family bodyguards would have a monthly wage of those numbers. Anyone that was slightly more impressive would only make more than a hundred thousand dollars.

“What do you mean a few hundred thousand dollars? He mentioned, he’d do it for at least twenty million dollars. Anything lower than that, he wouldn’t agree to it. Moreover, that was all because his wife wanted a job, so I promised to employ his wife as our project manager. It was only then was he willing to work for us! The main point is, this guy is a little too unreasonable. He mentioned something about not having fixed working hours and he’d be able to leave work whenever he pleases!”

Tanya said after cracking a bitter smile.

“What? You agreed to such terms? Not only was the wages high, he wouldn’t even listen to us? In addition to that, he can leave whenever he wants to? How is that okay?” Timothy was so shocked, his eyeballs were seemingly about to fall onto the ground as he immediately placed his tea cup down then told James, “Father, this guy is too unreasonable now. Who on earth does he think he is? If he’s the King of War or God of War, that would be acceptable or else, what right does he have to request for such a demand?”

“No matter who he is, if he doesn’t make such a request, it would be extremely abnormal and it’ll only prove that he had no actual strengths!” James on the other hand was laughing while nodding his head. He said, “If he’s truly capable, he wouldn’t even bat an eye on the twenty million dollars. He merely agreed because he had nothing to do and wanted to keep his wife company or perhaps, he was just killing time. Besides, if he doesn’t look for a job, he would be looked down by the Taylor family!”

“Father, what you’re saying is that he’s worth this money?” Timothy was frowning as he seemed slightly frustrated.

“Not only was he worthy, I believe he’s more than worthy! Not to mention, without taking his powers into account, it’s worth it because of his unique relationship with the God of War!” James chuckled then said, “That’s right, when he arrives, you two have to treat him well. If he wishes to leave work, let him leave. Treat him the same as the guardians in our family even if by name, he’s a bodyguard!”

“No way right, father? The few guardians in our family are all extremely powerful! This...” Timothy was sweating on his face as he was skeptical of his father. He had seen through Jack’s information and he felt that this man was not that special.

Perhaps it was due to the God of War noticing Jack who was coincidentally also heading back to Eastfield and shared the same ride back. If that was the case, they would have lost majorly. However on a much deeper thought, he thought about how important his family business was and that twenty million dollars was a mere meager sum so he could forget about it just in case that guy could truly surprise them.

...

At this moment, Jack and the others were done with their meals and were ready to head back together.

After the rest of the Taylor family had left as they exited the hotel, Fiona said after pondering for a moment, "That's right Selena, you're about to go to work tomorrow, should we buy a car? I still have eight hundred thousand with me. After much thoughts, I realized we could not embarrass our Taylor family's name, right? Besides, your monthly wages are that high so you can return the money to me after you get paid next time!"

"Ma, I want to buy a car as well!" Ben immediately said that excitedly the moment he heard that.

"Why'd you need a car for? You're doing nothing all day and you're not going to work anyway. I won't buy you a car! After your sister has made some money, have her buy you one. Is that okay?" Fiona said as she smiled.

"Ma, Jack is going to work tomorrow as well, can we also buy him one?" After Selena pondered about it, she said that.

"Him?" Fiona took a look at Jack. She said after she pondered for a moment, "Who knows if Miss Tanya was joking or not. Even I'm skeptical about making twenty million a month. Besides, it's for transport and it'll cost about tens of thousands of dollars. Forget it then, but I can buy him an electric scooter. Just ride it for now. Since if it's real, after he gets paid he can buy himself a luxury car, right?"

"Then, I won't be buying a car as well. Just buy an electric scooter then he can take me to work on that!" Selena looked at Jack then said with a smile.

"Honey, that just made riding a bike even more romantic!" No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 66-70

Chapter 66

“Sure. It’s quite a long way. As long as you’re tired, that won’t be a problem!” Selena smiled blissfully. At first, she thought that Jack seemed cold ever since he came back from the war. He always had on a serious face. Unexpectedly, there were times where he could be romantic.

“Of course, I won’t be tired. As long as you’re the one behind me, anything is bearable. I can even be strong enough to carry you to work every day!” Jack replied happily.

“Daddy, I want you to carry me too!” Kylie, who was in his arms chuckled.

“Sure, come on. Daddy will carry you!” Jack placed the little girl on his back in one swooping motion.

“Brother-in-law, if you really became a bodyguard with a salary of twenty million dollars a month, can you help me get a car? All the matters earlier were just misunderstandings.” Ben ran up to them after getting a glance from Xena and asked with a chuckle, trying to butter up to Jack.

Although he too felt that the Second Miss was being conned by Jack. However, what if it turned out to be true? Buttering Jack up cost nothing anyway.

Jack gave it a thought, then nodded. “Sure, but it can’t be too expensive. Any car under one million dollars is fine. When the time comes, you go pick it out yourself!”

“Really? Any car under one million dollars?” Hearing that, Ben was elated. At first, he thought getting something between a hundred to two hundred thousand dollars would be a dream come true. Who would have thought that Jack would be that generous, letting him pick anything under one million dollars just like that?

“Of course. It’s not that expensive!” Jack chuckled. His words once again made Fiona and the others speechless. ‘One million dollars, yet this brat doesn’t think it’s expensive?’

“Honey, I think we should get a motorcycle instead. You can just drop me off to work! After we get our

pay and have the money on hand, then we'll get a car. How about that?" Selena smiled, then continued, "I've not been working for such a long time, it feels a little exciting!"

"It's your decision Honey. As long as you're willing, you can buy whatever you want, even a plane!" Jack replied casually with a laugh.

"Plane? We don't even know if you can make it to work tomorrow yet and you're already delusional? Listen to me, we'll stick to our previous promise, understand? You must send me ten million dollars worth of betrothal gifts on the old master's seventieth birthday. Only then I'll recognize you as my live-in son-in-law, got it?" Fiona interjected with a smile.

"Relax, you'll have your ten million dollars!" Jack nodded as he replied.

Fiona and the rest quickly took a taxi home. Jack, on the other hand, took Selena along to shop for an electric scooter. They quickly arrived at an electric scooter shop and purchased one, then rode it back home.

"Honey, I still don't dare to believe the words of Miss Drake. Paying you twenty million dollars a month as a bodyguard, do you think it makes sense?" Selena could not resist asking as she sat behind Jack.

"Of course, it's real. Her status and identity is for all to see. Moreover, twenty million dollars is nothing to their family!" Jack laughed bitterly, then added, "If not for ensuring your sense of security, I wouldn't even agree to it! This price is already really low. It can't go any lower!"

"Boasting again. I really don't understand why she would offer such a price. It can't be that she thinks you're handsome and has a crush on you?"

Chapter 67

Selena smiled and made a joke.

“You don’t say. I really think that might be possible. After all, your husband is so handsome, what happens if someone decides to be my sugar mommy?” Jack was speaking as he looked backward at that snow-white sexy thigh that was just by his side. He moved his hand over and lightly caressed the side of her leg.

“Ah!” Selena did not expect Jack to be so brazen. Her face turned red immediately, “What’re you doing?! How can you be so mischievous while driving in broad daylight?! Do you know how embarrassing it is for others to see this on the street? I didn’t expect you to be such a delinquent.”

“I just saw a mosquito and decided to kill it for you!” Jack answered with a straight face.

“Mosquito my butt. Do you think I’m a three-year-old?! If you do that again, I’ll get off and walk home!” Selena was frustrated, feeling extremely embarrassed.

Right then, a Ferrari passed by. Seeing such a scene, the driver could not resist swallowing a mouthful of saliva. “Hot damn, who’s that woman? Her figure is superb. That leg of hers is just so alluring. That skirt...it’d be nice if it was just a little shorter!” Upon seeing such a beauty, the young man quickly slowed down just to get a better glimpse.

Seeing that, the blonde woman beside him immediately got jealous. “Young Master Hugo, my skirt is already short enough. You can have a look too!” When she spoke, the woman intentionally used a coquettish voice.

It was undeniable that the woman sitting beside Young Master Hugo was also quite the sight.

Furthermore, that woman was wearing a very revealing outfit. However, Young Master Hugo glanced at her and back at the beauty on the electric scooter, then shook his head. “I still feel that you’re lacking something. Your face and aura is not her match. Although both of you have beautiful legs, there’s quite a difference between the both of you!”

That woman was extremely frustrated, yet she dared not offend Young Master Hugo and could only hold it all in. Just as the car and electric scooter drove side by side, the woman studied Selena carefully and told Young Master Hugo, “Young Master Hugo, I know who this woman is. Isn’t she Selena Taylor?”

Oh my goodness, her husband was just a delivery boy and has not been home for five years. I think he's long dead on the battlefield!"

Then the woman paused for a moment before continuing, "She's just a single mother. There are quite a few guys courting her, but she never agreed. At first, I thought that she was being noble, waiting for her man to come home. I never expected her to be fooling around with this guy!"

"She's that Selena Taylor that holds the title of Eastfield's prettiest woman? She's quite the character back then, but was later kicked out of the Taylor family!" Young Master Hugo seemed to have recalled something, then smiled. "Heh, women can't stand loneliness after all. So, she rejected all those guys just to keep her image. After holding it out for five years, how could she stand the loneliness any longer?"

While he spoke, Young Master Hugo swallowed hard, then added, "This type of woman is all the more interesting."

After some contemplations, Young Master Hugo saw a puddle further up. The corner of his lips curled into a smile, the car was stopped immediately. By the time Jack's electric scooter was almost reaching the puddle, he suddenly stepped on the gas and caught up to them. Following that, he caused the muddy water in the puddle to splash all over Jack and Selena.

"Ah!" When Selena and Jack noticed the sports car pulling over, they did not think much about it. They never expected the other party would do something like that. After all, the road was spacious and they did not need to go through the puddle as they drove by.

"D*mn it, is that person asking for death?" Jack's expression darkened and immediately gave chase as he realized the other party's malicious intent. Unexpectedly, the other party had also pulled over ahead and got out of the car.

Chapter 68

"What's the meaning of this?" Jack stopped the electric scooter next to the car and stared coldly at the other person after he got off it. "Are you blind?"

Young Master Hugo acted as though he could not hear a word from Jack. Instead, he looked at Selena and asked, "Oh my, this...isn't this Selena Taylor, the prettiest girl according to the legends? Miss Taylor, I heard that a lot of gentlemen are courting you, yet you've turned them all down. And here I thought you're being loyal and waiting for your trashy husband!"

Having said that, he then looked toward Jack disdainfully, continuing, "It turns out that you would find loneliness too hard to bear at times too. Seems like I've caught you in the act, didn't I?"

"Does any of my matter have anything to do with you?" Selena could not be bothered to debate with him, stating coldly, "That was intentional, right? You purposely parked your car by the side, then waited for us to pass this puddle to rush over, isn't it?"

"Oh my, Miss Taylor, your words are too much. It was really an accident!" Young Master Hugo shrugged, then took a bag out of his car. He fished out twenty thousand dollars and handed it over. "Here's twenty thousand dollars as compensation. Although it's not a lot of money, it's the thought that counts, right? Oh, I'm Young Master Hugo from a second-class aristocratic family by the way. If you don't mind, we can be friends!"

He knew that Selena was not living a comfortable life at the moment and was suppressed by the Taylor family. Twenty thousand dollars might be sufficient to move her. As long as he obtained her contact, that would mean that it would be possible for him to ask her out in the future.

"We don't want your money. Apologize!" Jack stated with a stern look on his face.

"Apologize?" Young Master Hugo was taken aback. He then sneered, "Brat, you must be kidding me. Didn't I just wet your clothes? Wasn't it sufficient for me to pay you off? Do you think it's possible for me to apologize to a poor bloke like you? Do you think I, Young Master Hugo, would not care for my reputation? Do you know how much my reputation is worth?"

"The problem is, we don't want the money!" Jack shrugged, remaining firm. "I'm not in a good mood now. You must apologize while kneeling down, understand?"

“Tsk tsk, kneeling down? Who do you think you are? Do you know of the Hugo family? Have you ever heard of the Hugo family? The Hugo family is a second-class aristocratic family, a powerful family beyond that of the Taylor family! Brat, if you know what’s good for you, this twenty thousand dollars is yours. Get out of my sight! How can a beauty like Miss Taylor here be sitting in that junk of yours? Only my sports car is worthy of being her ride!”

Young Master Hugo threw the twenty thousand dollars at Jack, then said to Selena, “Miss Taylor, we’re all adults. I won’t beat around the bush. It’s really not suitable for you to be riding this electric scooter. Just like earlier, how inconvenient was that? Let’s go, get in my sports car and I’ll go get you a set of better clothes. We’ll head to the hotel for a shower.”

“So what if you have a sports car? I’m sorry, but I prefer to ride on an electric scooter. I’m not any casual woman, so please watch your words and be more respectful!” Selena was also extremely frustrated. However, as she recalled the power behind his family, she tried to pull Jack back. “Nevermind, let’s leave!”

“Drop the act. You’re not a casual woman? Didn’t you claim that you’re waiting for your husband to come back? Your husband has yet to come back, and here you are, out with some other guy? Don’t think that I have no idea what women like you are like. You’re only pure on the outside, but internally, you’re wild!” Young Master Hugo sneered again.

“Excuse me, he’s my husband, Jack White. I’ve waited for him for five years and now he’s back!” Selena tugged at Jack once again. “Let’s go, Honey. I can’t be bothered to deal with trash like this!”

However, Jack remained standing on the spot. “Since you’re unwilling to apologize, I’ll have to take action!” Just as he finished, Jack went forward with a punch, immediately sending Young Master Hugo to the ground. Before he could get up, Jack followed up with another kick.

Chapter 69

The puddle was already over a dozen meters behind them. However, Jack’s kick was extraordinarily powerful. He managed to send him flying, finally landing in that puddle.

Young Master Hugo's floral shirt was then drenched by the muddy water.

"Y-y-you dare to hit Young Master Hugo? Are you looking for death?" The woman was terrified, immediately backing away as she pointed at Jack.

Jack maintained emotionless, staring straight at her. "Do you want me to take action, or will you voluntarily roll in that puddle over there?"

"D-d-don't hit me..." The woman was scared witless by Jack's gaze. It was the gaze of someone that survived countless bloodbaths. After saying that, she quickly ran over and started rolling in the puddle. Her skirt was already very short. After it got wet, her body shape was all the more revealing.

"Bastard, y-y-you just wait!" Young Master Hugo was boiling with rage. He stood up, then spat out a mouthful of blood. The skin on his arm tore and was bleeding. Even his shirt got torn up from the friction. He looked pathetic.

"Honey, their family is very powerful. You've caused trouble again!" Selena frowned. She was worried and at a loss of what to do.

However, Jack just walked up to Young Master Hugo's car and smashed his fist into it. Bang! With a loud sound, a gaping hole appeared on his car as though it was made of paper.

"This..." Upon witnessing that terrifying strength, Selena was dumbfounded. Jack's strength was too monstrous. Was that something a human was capable of?

When Jack walked back, his face had a warm smile on it. "Honey, let's go. We'll head back for a bath and change our clothes!"

"But...the Hugo family is full of experts. If they come looking for us, what should we do?" Selena was still extremely worried.

“Relax, they’re no match for me!” Jack nonchalantly got on the scooter. “Come on, let’s head back for a bath. It’d be bad if you catch a cold, Honey!”

Although Selena was worried, it would do them no good to stay there either. After hesitating for a moment, she got on the scooter and they both quickly drove away. However, to their surprise, when they arrived at gates of the courtyard, they found a huge demolition notice stuck on his gates.

“What’s the matter? Are they trying to demolish this place?” Jack and Selena exchanged glances in shock. When they left in the morning, nothing was on the gates yet this huge notice was now there.

Chapter 70

“Demolish? If that’s the case, shouldn’t we get a bit of compensation?” Jack was distracted for a moment, then followed Selena into the house.

At that moment, the living room was very lively. There were a number of workers that were talking to Fiona and Andrew.

“Oh my, Selena, what happened to both of you? Why are you covered in dirt?” Seeing Selena and Jack, Joan was shocked, asking quickly.

“Ugh, we passed by a puddle earlier and a car did not slow down...so we got splashed!” Selena stuttered with a frown. She was too ashamed to say it. If her mother knew that they offended the terrible Hugo family, how would she react?

“Oh my, so this is Miss Taylor!” A middle-aged man stood up cheerfully, then explained, “I’m the worker in charge. It’s like this. This location is being expropriated as it is rather peaceful here. We’re planning to build a retirement home, therefore this house must be demolished!”

“Retirement home?” Selena frowned.

“That’s right. You can treat it as a contribution to the country! Moreover, this place is decrepit. Our experts appraised it and it’s considered unsafe for habitation. You have three days to move out. Please cooperate with our work!” The man explained with a cheerful smile. His smile looked warm and gentle.

“Unsafe for habitation? How can that be?” Selena breathed in deeply. They had no money to buy a house at this time. If they moved out, where would they stay? Moreover, although the house was quite old and run down, it was not unsafe for habitation. It would still be safe for a couple more years.

Furthermore, they were already accustomed to the large courtyard and had thought of this place as home. Having to move out all of a sudden was quite difficult to take in.

“That’s right. Our experts have already done the appraisal!” The man smiled. “Furthermore, this would also beautify our city, wouldn’t it? With such an old courtyard here, it wouldn’t look nice either. Now that our country has won the war, quite a few powerful figures are coming back from the battlefield. If they saw this, it might make them look bad, right?”

“No problem, no problem. We’ll definitely move out in three days, We’re citizens after all. It’s only fair to contribute.” Fiona immediately agreed with a smile.

“Mm, wonderful. You have a good mindset!” The other old man nodded approvingly.

“As it should be!” Fiona chuckled, then stated, “As for the matter of compensation, you see, this place is quite good. With such a large area, if not a hundred million dollars, it should be at least a few tens of million dollars, right? If that won’t do, ten million dollars would suffice! That way we can buy a house!”

“That’s right. As long as the price is suitable, we can even move out immediately!” Andrew nodded along as well.

To their surprise, upon hearing those words, the worker’s face turned cold immediately. “Madam, I’m afraid you didn’t understand what I said. Your place is affecting our city’s image. You should be

contributing to the country!"No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 71-75

Chapter 71

"Furthermore, we have received complaints that this courtyard was built illegally, do you understand? You're already lucky that you're not getting fined. We're just negotiating to have you move away voluntarily. What makes you think there will be any compensation?"

The middle-aged man had a smile on his face, but his words immediately turned the rest and Fiona's mood foul. This demolition had no compensation?

"Impossible. This is our Taylor family's old mansion. It's been left uninhabited for many years. My grandfather was the one that told us to stay here. At any rate, there should be a demolition compensation. How is this an illegal building? We've been staying here for so many years!" Selena was furious. Her original plan was to come home for a bath, but she was in no mood for that for the time being. The other party was just being unreasonable.

"I think the money is there, but you're just planning to keep it for yourself, right? Do you know that we're from the Taylor family? You should really investigate carefully before coming. You want to demolish this place without paying the compensation? Dream on!" Fiona's expression changed immediately. The smile was long gone from her face.

"We're just here to notify you. If you don't appreciate the gesture, we can have the demolition crew come over with just a phone call at any moment! Since you claim that it's not illegal, do you have the premise permit?" The old man asked with a laugh.

Fiona's expression darkened. "This is not commercial housing. It's our Taylor family's homestead. How do you expect us to get a permit? Regardless, you should be paying some form of compensation. Otherwise, you're not allowed to demolish it!"

"Illegal or not, it's for us to decide, not you. You can't even show us the premise permit, then it'll be

demolished today itself!” That middle-aged man chuckled, then made a phone call.

After he finished with the call, he laughed, “Of course, I know that you’re from the Taylor family. However, the one in charge of this project is Young Master Clark, Ken Clark! Their group is the one in charge of building this retirement home. Can you afford to offend them?”

“I was wondering who it is. So it’s that trash!” Jack finally understood. Last time, he had given him a beating. He probably was still feeling bitter over that incident. However, Jack did not expect him to use such tactics to seek revenge on them.

“Him?” Fiona’s face turned pale. The current Taylor family could not afford to offend the Clark family. Moreover, they were kicked out of the Taylor family. The old master might not even bother helping them and could even blame them for offending the untouchables.

She turned around, then rushed at Jack, shoving him. “It’s all your fault. If not for you, this wouldn’t happen. It’s because you hit him last time. Now they’re here for revenge and we’re getting kicked out soon. Where are we going to stay?”

“Mother, don’t worry. Nobody will dare kick us out!” Jack smiled coldly, then looked at Selena who was covered in mud. He said lovingly, “Honey, you go wash up and change your clothes. I’ll wait here for them!”

“O-okay!” For some reason, Jack’s confident gaze helped calm her heart down. She grabbed a set of clothes and then went to wash up.

Upon hearing that Selena was going to shower, the few workers swallowed hard. They wondered how alluring the scene would be when a beauty like that showered. Unfortunately, they had no chance to witness that and could only imagine it in their heads.

The men grew all the more jealous of Jack. ‘This guy sure is lucky to have found such a beautiful woman that bore him a child. That’s a dream come true for countless men out there.’

After Selena was done with her shower and changed, she came back to the courtyard. Right outside were three excavators, a group of people, and Young Master Clark.

“I heard there are some unruly people here that refused to listen to the management!”

Ken sneered as he walked slowly into the courtyard with a few people behind him.

Chapter 72

“Oh my, Young Master Clark, why are you here? It’s been a long time!” Upon seeing Ken with his lackeys, Fiona immediately welcomed them cheerfully.

“Auntie, it’s not that long. We’ve just met two days ago!”

Ken chuckled, then pointed at his teeth. “Look, I’m whistling as I speak. It’s all because of your precious son-in-law!”

Fiona’s expression immediately turned awkward. She forced a smile and replied, “Watch what you’re saying. This man is not my son-in-law. We will only find out after the old man’s seventieth birthday in about twenty more days!”

Ken was taken aback, his face was filled with surprise. “Auntie, what do you mean by that? They’re already legally married and the kid is a few years old. Why do we need to wait for about 20 more days to find out?”

“Yes yes yes!” Fiona immediately nodded. “It’s like this. Let’s not mention the matters back then. It’s like this. After Jack came back, he got into a fight with Young Master Ivan and beat him up. After that...that’s why, by then, he would need to cough up thirty million dollars or he will be kicked out of our Taylor family. Of course, if he doesn’t send me the ten million dollars worth of betrothal gifts, Selena’s father and I will never recognize his identity!” Fiona explained away. After she was done, she immediately dragged Ken aside and whispered, “Young Master Clark, please rest assured. He won’t be able to take out that much money when the time comes. As long as he can’t produce the money, then our Selena will regain her freedom. Once she regains her freedom, wouldn’t that mean you’ll have a chance?”

Hearing that, Ken's heart rejoiced. He turned to look at Selena who was standing there and was surprised once more. At that moment, Selena had just finished her shower and have yet to dry her hair. Standing there, she looked all the more alluring. That pair of snow white long legs were especially eye catching under the sunlight.

Considering that he had over twenty more days to go, his expression darkened and said, "Auntie, that's a long time to wait. I don't feel like waiting any longer. Isn't it just ten million dollars of betrothal gifts? As long as you can think of a way to have Selena marry me, even a hundred million dollars in betrothal gifts is not an issue!"

"A hundred million dollars!?" Hearing that, Fiona's heart was swayed in an instant. Although Jack had found a good job, who knew if that job offer was just Miss Tanya playing with him.

Moreover, if Jack worked like that, who knew how long his job would last? What if he got fired one day? He was quite hot-headed after all.

Young Master Clark on the other hand, looked dashing and was courteous. If her daughter marries him, then she would definitely be living comfortably in the future.

"The betrothal gifts can be negotiated. It's just that I've promised Jack and I can't just change as I like to!" Fiona looked at Kylie who was playing nearby, feeling a little uncomfortable.

After all, if Jack's work was a real deal, then he would get quite a lot in one year. Most importantly, Kylie was still her granddaughter. It was naturally better for her to live with her biological father. At least she would not have to suffer in the future. That was why she decided to give Jack another chance. What if he really pulled through?

"Auntie, don't you worry. I have my ways. You just ask Selena to come over and I'll have a private chat with her. If she agrees to divorce Jack, then I can choose to not demolish your house and will definitely treat her well. If she disagrees, I'll threaten her with the demolition of your house. I believe that a kind-hearted girl like her would surely agree!" Ken told Fiona after some thoughts.

“Sure. However, if my daughter agrees, that would be great too!”

Chapter 73

Fiona gave it some thought, then finally approached Selena. “Dear, Young Master Clark said that he would like to discuss the matter of this house with you. Go ahead and negotiate with him. This house must not be demolished. If it’s demolished, where would our entire family find a place to stay all of a sudden?”

Selena kept silent for a moment, then nodded and walked over.

“This house is our family’s old mansion. Although it’s not a registered property, it’s considered a property of our Taylor family. You can’t just demolish it like that!” Selena looked at Young Master Clark in front of her as she stated coldly.

Before Jack came back, Young Master Clark would come over to court her all the time. There were a few times that he suggested for her to apply for a death certificate to divorce Jack, then marry him. Although she felt annoyed by him, he was not that bad in general. At least, the impression Selena had of him was much better than that Michael. She never thought that he would resort to such tactics. This caused her frustrations toward Young Master Clark to reach a new height.

“Hey, isn’t this for the city’s appearance, for the good of Eastfield?” Clark took out a cigarette and lit it. After inhaling deeply, he finally stated, “Selena, you know that I’m sincerely in love with you. More so than those other gentlemen out there! As long as you’re willing to divorce that trash and marry me, when the time comes, I’ll guarantee you a luxurious life! Of course, it doesn’t matter if they demolish this house or not. Whether to build the retirement house here or not will depend on your attitude. If you agree to marry me, I’ll call them off immediately!” Ken smiled coldly as he stated.

“Young Master Clark, you’re really cunning. They’ve always said that money makes the world go round. Today I finally learned that it’s true!” Selena laughed coldly. “Your behavior is only going to make me think the worst of you!”

“It can’t be helped. Your opinion of me is no longer of any importance. I only want you to be my woman!”

I want you to know that I'm much better than that delivery boy!" Ken shrugged, his expression thoughtful. "Consider carefully. If you don't agree, I will start demolishing the house right now!"

"You won't dare!" Selena was furious, but she looked at the people that he brought along and felt helpless. "You can't demolish the house, and I will never marry you!"

"You'll see if I dare! In Eastfield, there are not a lot of things that I'm scared of!" Ken laughed out loudly, his eyes had a vicious look in them.

"Why don't you let them try demolishing then?" At that moment, Jack sneered and walked up to them unexpectedly.

This Ken was really naive to think that Jack would not hear him if he pulled Fiona and Selena to the side to talk privately. Jack's hearing had long exceeded that of an ordinary person. He had clearly heard all their previous conversations. He just wanted to find out what was Selena and Fiona's attitude toward this matter.

"Go ahead with the demolition. Someone doesn't know his place!" Ken gave the order with a wave of his hand!

Chapter 74

Meanwhile, at the Clark Family Villa. Clark family's expert Dan Jameson did not see Young Master Clark when he returned. He could not help but frown.

"Where's Young Master Clark? Where did he go?" Dan thought about it, then asked one of the bodyguards.

"He took a group of people with him and left. I saw that he was rather happy, saying something about definitely getting his hands on that Selena woman!" the guard answered after some thought.

“It can’t be!” Hearing that, Dan breathed in deeply. “This Young Master Clark! Didn’t I just warn him last time not to go look for trouble with that Jack White? Why won’t he listen!?”

Ever since he lost the arm wrestling with Jack, Dan knew deep down in his heart how terrifying Jack was. With the ability that Jack had, even within the military, he would not be a regular soldier. He would at least be of a decent rank. A person like that, their Clark family would be better off steering clear from them. At first, he thought Ken would listen to him. Who would have thought that Ken would go looking for Selena again.

“Commander Jameson, you’re being too careful. This time, Young Master Clark has everything under control! Otherwise, he wouldn’t have gone! He said that he would only take strong measures after the courteous one fails!” That guard chuckled, then added, “If not for Young Master Clark not bringing me along, I would’ve loved to go have a look. I’ve heard that Selena Taylor was very pretty. Tsk...tsk... I wonder what her expression would be when she’s forced to accept our young master’s offer.”

“Forced to accept?” Dan’s brows twitched. “What does he mean by taking strong measures after the courteous one fails? Could it be the same old tactic of paying a certain amount to Fiona to help persuade them? With Selena’s personality, it’s impossible for her to agree to that. Furthermore, now that her husband’s back, the chances of that happening is even lower.”

“No. This time, our young master used his connections and planned to demolish Selena’s house and use that to threaten them. Of course, if that Jack dares to take action, our young master has no fear because there’s an expert that came back from the military that went along with young master! He’s an officer! Moreover, he’s not just a major, but a marshal!”

The bodyguard smiled. “You should know how powerful those who made it as officers out of so many people! Especially when it’s a marshal!”

When Dan heard those words, he took in a deep breath as he was shocked to the core.

He knew that those that could become an officer were experts on the battlefield. They were all powerful figures. Moreover, this time round, it was said that those who had the status of a major would have at least a thousand men under them and could even go up to a few thousand men.

As for the marshal, he would have a few majors under them. From that, one could tell how much higher their status was. He had even got wind that within those that retired from the battlefield, the majors

were all awarded one billion dollars! It was considered an acknowledgement for what they have done over the years.

As for the marshals, they were returning with a few billion dollars. When placed in any town, they would be placed among the extremely rich figures. Never did he expect Young Master Clark to be connected with a person like that and have the other party be willing to help him out.

“If there’s an expert like that with him, then we won’t have much to fear!”

After considering it carefully, the burden in Dan’s heart lifted. Those that managed to become a marshal would have achieved great service in the military. Their capability was guaranteed. At the very least, he was not confident to face them in a fight.

“That’s right. Just relax. This time, our young master will surely succeed!”

Chapter 75

That bodyguard said cheerfully, “For all we know, he might have already succeeded! Our young master is just waiting to carry the beauty home!”

...

“Demolish it!” Ken gave the order, planning to let those men take action.

“What’s going on? Did Jack overhear their conversation? Why did he go over to meddle?” Seeing the outcome, Fiona was truly shocked.

At first, she thought her own daughter was very filial and would most likely agree to their request, but...

“I’ll see who dares!” Jack took a few steps forward and stood in front of the gate. At that moment, although he looked dirty in clothes that were stained with muddy water, the aura he gave off while standing there gave people quite the scare.

“Jack White, you’re quite brazen!” Ken laughed, then said to a middle-aged man nearby, “Brother Howard, I’ll have to depend on you to help me teach this brat a lesson!”

Jack had noticed long ago. Although that man only stood there all the while without saying anything, he was no ordinary person. He had a certain quality about him that only a soldier would have. His posture was perfectly straight, a trait that regular people did not have. The man looked at Jack, then frowned. He could feel that Jack had a similar quality about him that was only present in those that returned from the battlefield. Although that was something others could not detect, those that stepped over countless bodies and survived would definitely pick up on it.

“You came back from the battlefield as well?” The man of the Howard family approached Jack and stopped in front of him. He did not take action immediately, but instead asked a question.

“Yes.” Jack nodded. “I’m curious. A person like you is aiding the evil. Why would you help this kind of person? If this is the battlefield, I could kill you right away!”

“You kill me? I’m afraid you don’t have the authority to!” Dennis Howard chuckled, then said, “Come, let’s have a private conversation inside. There’s no need to complicate this matter. After all, you’re a veteran as well. I don’t wish to make it difficult for you!”

Hearing that, Jack laughed. “Interesting. Then let’s talk inside!”

Dennis looked at Ken, then said, “I’ll talk with him inside. Without my orders, no one else is allowed to take any actions!”

“It can’t be. Brother Howard, you can just cripple him, give him a good round of beating and have him get out of our sights. Worst comes to worst, you can just kill him. Why do you need to negotiate with

him? He's not qualified!"

Ken's mouth was wide open as he doubted his own hearing. Although Jack was a veteran as well, what made him qualified to negotiate with a marshal? Most likely, if Jack found out about his identity, he might just kneel down in terror. Both of them entered the house, then closed the door behind.

After Dennis closed the door, he finally lifted his head slightly and placed his hands behind him, showing the demeanor of an authoritative figure. "To be frank, based on my own personality, I wouldn't have helped that Ken, but I have my own reasons!" Having said that, he stated bluntly, "I'm a marshal. Having to do this, I feel helpless as well. Please just move. I'll pass you the money in secret as compensation! This way, it'll be good for all parties! Please do this favor for me!" No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 76-80

Chapter 76

"In that case, you also know that tearing down our house without providing compensation is wrong, right? You're also feeling uncomfortable about this and want to make up for us, right?"

Facing the marshal, Jack did not have the slightest fear or nervousness. Instead, he smiled indifferently.

"If this is on the battlefield, and we are still in the army, you would not have such an attitude when you see a fellow soldier!"

Dennis's face sank. "I don't want to be calculative. Fifty million and your entire family needs to move away. However, you cannot tell Ken Clark!"

"That's weird. You are a good and a reputable soldier. Yet, you are afraid of Ken? I really don't understand what you are afraid of?" Jack frowned in confusion.

"I'm not afraid. Years ago, before I became a soldier, our family was very poor. Once, my sister and I were about to starve to our deaths, he passed by and gave us a few thousand dollars. Although the

money was nothing to him, but, to me, it meant a lot as it saved our lives!

“Apart from this, there’s another reason and it’s because I like Ken’s sister...” Dennis smiled bitterly and after he finished speaking, he said to Jack, “Since I promised him that I would help him with this favor, I can only give you money privately and you can leave with the others. This way, I won’t offend him and I also technically not forcing you to demolish your house. Consider this as me buying peace of my mind!”

“You’re paying for your peace of mind!” Jack chuckled and then said, “However, I don’t want to trouble my wife while I’m searching for a place to stay!”

Seeing that Jack still refused to listen to him after he had made such a big offer and stated his intention so clearly.

Dennis’s face immediately darkened. “Young man, don’t be so overboard. I’m only speaking to you because we have once killed enemies together on the battlefield and you’re a man. You have to know that you don’t even have the qualifications to talk to me!”

“Are you sure?” Jack laughed after he heard this. “I’m telling you this, I really don’t care about marshals like you!”

“Seems like we will have to settle this by force, don’t blame me for being merciless. Let me ask you again, do you agree or not? If you don’t agree, we’ll demolish by force. I can even kill or destroy you!” Dennis clenched his fist and his aura was terrifying.

He wanted to resolve this matter in a civilised manner, but he did not expect that this young man would not appreciate it.

“You?” Jack smiled coldly. “Consider yourself lucky that I didn’t make you kneel before me when you meet me!”

“I kneel before you? Humph, do you think that you’re the God of War? I would not even kneel down to the King of War in my entire life. Unless I meet the God of War. Only he is worthy of my respect to kneel before him. Young man, do you qualify?”

Dennis was so angry that he almost exploded. He took a step forward, lunged, and his fists flew straight to Jack’s face.

Jack gently moved to the side to avoid the opponent’s attack.

“What!”

The opponent did not expect Jack to react so quickly and surprise flashed through his eyes. The next second, he attacked continuously with both his fists. The speed of the fists was so terrifying it sounded as if the wind was howling.

Jack evaded one after another. At a certain moment, Jack finally fought back. He kicked and it happened to hit the opponent’s ankle. The powerful force had caused Dennis to fall down on the floor with one knee.

Crack! A thin crack appeared on the thick limestone on the ground.

Chapter 77

“You...” Shock could be seen in Dennis’ eyes. He could not imagine that the opponent was so fast to be able to dodge his attack every time. The opponent was also very strong. His body shook and was about to stand up.

However, Jack placed a hand on his shoulder to press him down. With some force, his other leg was also forced to kneel as he grumbled. He gritted his teeth, tried to stand up, just to find out that Jack’s power was as terrifying as a big mountain. He couldn’t stand up with Jack pressing down on him.

Dennis glanced at Jack, but all he saw was a slight smile on Jack's face. Jack seemed extremely relaxed, as if he was not using much power.

"If you were an enemy on the battlefield, you would already have died thousands of times!" Jack spoke lightly before releasing Dennis.

Dennis knelt on the floor in a daze with his eyes filled with trance in a daze. Strong! He was extremely strong! Who was this man in front of him and how could he be so powerful? He did not doubt what Jack said previously. If Jack wanted to kill him, he would have died much earlier.

"Who are you?" Dennis frowned and raised his head slowly with suspicion. "Even the King of War cannot be so powerful. It won't be so easy to deal with me!"

At this point, Dennis paused and said, "However, I know all the Nine Great Gods of War in this world and I know that you are not one of them. How can your strength be comparable to the God of War?"

It was shocking. Dennis could not imagine that this man, who did not look very special, dressed ordinarily, and even had dirt on his clothes, actually had such scary fighting power!

"God of War?" A hint of playfulness danced at the corner of his mouth. "Would you believe if I tell you that the Nine Great Gods of War are my apprentices?"

"Im...impossible? How is that possible? Why don't I know that the Nine Great Gods of War have a master?" Dennis was shocked once again. Did the Nine Great Gods of War have a master?

"Because I asked them to keep it secret. Not many people know that they are my apprentices. Maybe only a few Kings of War know!" Jack laughed. "I trained them, turned them into nine sharp swords, and let them gallop on the battlefield. Otherwise, the battle between us and the enemy would probably take another one and a half years to end!"

“Oh yes, there’s only one person who is more powerful than the Nine Great Gods of War. His identity is extremely mysterious. It was said that after he had always worn a dragon-shaped mask after he became a general. The mask covers seventy percent of his face! There are only a handful of people who have seen his face! And he’s the most mysterious, and also the strongest person in Daxia, the Supreme Warrior!” As Dennis spoke, he felt that his heartbeat accelerated and he slowly stood up. He looked at the man in front of him carefully and then said, “Could it be that you...you are Lord Supreme Warrior?”

Jack laughed, his palm flipped and a dragon-shaped mask appeared in his hand. After putting the mask on his face, only his left eye could be seen. The entire mask looked like an ancient dragon and it covered most of his face.

“Lord... Lord Supreme Warrior!” Looking at the mask, Dennis’s voice trembled with fright. He thumped and knelt on the ground. “I should die. Please forgive me, Lord Supreme Warrior!”

Chapter 78

The Supreme Warrior had always been the most mysterious existence in the army! Although a lot of people knew about his special mask, there were only very few who knew his face. Everytime this dragon-shaped mask appeared in the battlefield, soldiers that were losing in the battle would instantly have the motivation to fight with confidence. It was said that, as long as this mask appeared, signifying that the Supreme Warrior had joined the war, they were never defeated. The mask and the wearer had become the faith of all warriors and their fighting soul.

They planned to officially declare the identity of the Supreme Warrior as everyone wanted to know what the Supreme Warrior looked like. However, it was unknown why only the Nine Great Gods of War was officially introduced but not this legendary figure.

At that point of time, Dennis was so frightened that his legs turned weak, with sweat dripping off his forehead. The Supreme Warrior was someone that no one could blaspheme. According to legend, the Supreme Warrior once made a joke and it caused two pieces of the ruler’s beard to be pulled down. If this was done by someone else, it would have been a capital crime.

“If I want to kill you, you would not be kneeling here now!” Jack smiled indifferently and then said, “Remember, although you have left the battlefield, you must retain the dignity and the battle spirit of us

as soldiers! Don't help a villain to do evil. Otherwise, I would clean up the garbage for Daxia!"

Dennis wiped his sweat. "Thank you, Supreme Warrior, for not killing me. I understand!"

"By the way, say nothing about my identity. I don't want to be disturbed and only want to stay by my wife's side. Do you understand?"

Jack took off the mask and flipped his palm. It was as if it had disappeared into thin air.

"Master Supreme Warrior, don't worry, I will keep it a secret even if it costs me my life. I will not say a word!" Dennis promised.

"Get up. After we open the door, I am Jack, do you understand?" Jack reminded him again.

...

Inside the yard. Everyone had been waiting and all of them had doubts written on their faces.

"Young Master Clark, what's going on? Why does Dennis have to talk to him alone? Is he still trying to persuade that rubbish, Jack, to divorce Miss Taylor?" One of the Clark family's bodyguards thought about it and could not help but speak out.

"Maybe, but if Jack dares to resist, he should be crippled if not die! I want to see if Selena would rather stay with a cripple or change her mind!" Ken sneered and looked at Selena, who was by his side.

He had no idea why. The more he could not get Selena, the more he wanted to get her. He believed that he could make this proud woman bow and be submissive to him.

“Jack is just a stupid guy, will they fight inside? Mister Howard does not seem like a simple person. What should we do if he’s killed?”

Fiona frowned and began to worry. “This young man cannot judge very well sometimes. Even if they demolish the house, we can rent a house. After all, I still have a few hundred thousands with me...”

“Mum, stop! This is the Taylor family’s old mansion. They can’t just demolish it. Apart from that, they don’t even want to pay any compensation. How can that be accepted?” Selena frowned and felt a little worried.

At this moment, the door slowly opened. Jack and Dennis walked out one after another.

Chapter 79

“How is everything? Should all of you move out? I don’t want to hear any answers other than ‘yes’!” Ken smiled coldly and said.

“Young Master Clark, let’s go!” Dennis’ face darkened. He walked in front of Ken and said in a low voice, “Hurry up and leave. If you don’t want the Clark family to disappear from Eastfield!”

“What... What’s happening?” Ken looked dazed. Was Dennis not a marshal? Why did he seem so afraid of Jack?

Dan Jameson, the top fighter of the Clark family, persuaded him to not provoke Jack. Unexpectedly, this marshal was also afraid and asked him to not offend Jack.

“Listen to me, otherwise, it will be the catastrophe of your family!” Dennis lowered his voice and reached at the side of Ken’s ears. He whispered something extremely serious before walking outside.

Ken was shocked. Dennis was a cream of the crop and the power of his status sent chills down the spine

of many, yet he was afraid of Jack. "Could it be..."

Ken thought of a possible explanation. Jack had returned from the military, was it possible that this man hid his identity and his true status was actually more respectable than Dennis? If that was the case, Jack would at least have the status of God of War. These people had such great achievements on the battlefield no one dared to offend them.

"Ahem, I see that the house here is not a dilapidated house. Let's go!" Ken coughed, turned around, and was about to leave with his people.

"Young Master, we... Are we leaving just like this?" The Clark family's bodyguards were puzzled. They had no idea what Dennis said to Ken.

"Why are we not leaving? The quality of their house is not bad, it's sure that we have to leave. It was a misunderstanding previously!" Ken smiled bitterly and explained embarrassingly.

The people from the relevant departments were previously aggressive. Now that they heard these words, they were stunned. What did...did Jack and Dennis talk about inside.

"Wait, Young Master Clark, it's not so good that you come and go as you please!" However, Jack unexpectedly smiled indifferently at this moment and stopped the other party.

"Jack, what do you mean? I cannot change my mind and don't have the intentions to build a retirement home now? Or you want to invite me for a meal and tea?" Ken, who was already feeling shameful, turned his head around and looked at Jack angrily.

"I'm afraid that you must be dreaming if you think that I would invite you for a meal!" Jack chuckled and then said, "Come here, kneel and apologize to me. Otherwise, how can you leave so easily. If I let you go so easily, what should we do if you are in a bad mood again and you would come over to demolish our house some other day?"

“Kneel and apologize? Jack, you must be crazy. I am the Eldest Young Master of the Clark family, the future Master of the Clark family. Do you think it would be possible for me to apologize to you?” Ken Clark laughed. So many people were looking at him, it was impossible for him to kneel and apologize. Otherwise, he would not have the dignity to leave his house in Eastfield later.

“Are you sure?” Jack stepped forward, stared at him and his facial expression was cold.

At this moment, Ken also thought about what Dennis had told him before and his facial expression instantly turned hard to look at. Did this Jack really have the ability to make the Clark family disappear?

Chapter 80

Ken became a little uncertain and hesitated. He believed that Dennis did not lie and he dared not gamble anymore. If he lost the bet, he was not the only one who had to die, his family would also be affected. The Clark family finally got to where they were today through a very difficult path and it cannot be ruined in his hands. Although Selena was beautiful—any man who had seen her would have intentions to court her, was it worth it to give up the entire Clark family because of a woman?

Fortunately, at this moment, Fiona pulled Jack backward and gave Jack a stern stare. “Are you crazy? What nonsense are you talking about? He’s the Clark family’s Young Master, we cannot afford to offend him!” After she finished speaking, she waved her hand at Ken. “Young Master Clark, it must have been a misunderstanding due to a mistake. It’s okay, you can all leave!”

After hearing this, Ken breathed a sigh of relief. It was better to walk away dingy than kneel and apologize. If this incident was spread out, would he not become a joke in Eastfield?

“Yes, yes, yes, Auntie is right!” Clark nodded. He looked at Jack and added, “Jack, I don’t want to leave but Auntie is asking me to, so don’t blame me!”

After he finished speaking, Ken ran to his car and quickly drove away, as if he was afraid that Jack would chase after him. All the subordinates were stunned. They had a feeling that their Young Master was afraid of Jack. However, it was only natural that they leave the place after their Young Master left. Hence they left one after another.

“This guy fleets faster than a rabbit!” Jack smiled bitterly, looked at himself and said, “Okay, I’ll go take a bath and change my clothes before we continue chatting!”

“That’s strange. Weren’t those people acting really rude? Why did they just leave like this? Also, what did your brother-in-law say to Mister Howard in the house just now?” Xena looked at Ben Taylor with a doubtful expression.

Ben smiled bitterly. “How would I know? It’s so weird. Since Mister Howard was specially invited by Young Master Clark, he should be a powerful person. But, why is such a powerful person afraid of my brother-in-law? I can feel the fear he felt!”

“How is that possible?” Fiona did not believe this and said, “I’m guessing, your brother-in-law knelt down in front of him behind closed doors and begged him to let us go!”

“How is that possible? Brother-in-law is a man, why would he kneel down to beg for mercy?” Ben shook his head in disbelief. “Why do I feel that brother-in-law is a little mysterious and is not as simple as he seems to be?”

“He’s simple! Who is he? He was a food delivery guy who served the military for five years and had just returned from the army!” Fiona said, “If he was any good, would we have such a miserable life in the past few years? I think Mister Howard must have considered the fact that Jack knelt and pleaded as a veteran, so he asked Young Master Clark to let go!”

“I think mum made a good guess!” Xena could not help but nodded while she stood on the other side. “Think about it again. If this isn’t the case, would someone honor Jack? Besides, why did Jack close the door? I remember that it was him who closed the door. To put it bluntly, he’s afraid that we will see his shameful scene!” No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 81-85

Chapter 81

“That seems to be it!” After Xena analyzed everything, Ben nodded. “It doesn’t matter. Although brother-in-law seems to be a little useless, he still knows how to save his dignity. He closed the door, nobody saw anything so there’s nothing to be shameful about. Anyways, it’s a good thing that our house doesn’t need to be demolished!”

“Yes. It’s a good thing that it does not need to be demolished. Two months from now, when your sister gets her salary, let’s buy a house!” Fiona smiled and nodded. After she thought about it, she said, “By the way, your sister is going to work tomorrow. Let’s go buy some food and do some shopping. I want to buy some better clothes!”

“Yes, mum, you have money now. Don’t you still have eight hundred thousand from the money Jack gave you? You have to buy some nice clothes. You have been so tired these few years! You should buy something good and treat yourself well!” Ben happily suggested.

Soon, Fiona, Ben, Andrew, and Xena went out on a shopping trip.

...

In the courtyard, Selena was accompanying Kylie, who was playing not far from her. After a while, Jack came out from the shower and had already changed into a set of fresh clothes. Although the clothes seemed to be a little old, it still felt refreshing.

“Husband, what did you talk about with Mister Howard inside? Did you really kneel and plead?” Selena was silent for a while before asking Jack.

Jack was embarrassed, smiled bitterly and then said, “Honey, do you think I’m such a person? We only talked about some things on the battlefield, he regrets that we did not meet earlier. It so happens that we have a mutual friend in the camp, so he gave me face and helped us!”

“You know such a powerful character like the marshal? You’re really amazing!” She obviously believed Jack’s words and said excitedly.

“Of course, Mister Howard is great. He is a marshal and I admire him!” Jack smiled lightly and then said.

“I had no idea that he is a marshal and is so powerful. No wonder Ken acted so ruthlessly when he came just now! However, he had no choice but to leave when the marshal asked him to!” Selena laughed gently. Her laugh was full of life like the spring breeze. Jack was almost dumbfounded by her gentleness and beauty.

“Honey, your smile is captivating. The only thing I can think of right now is kissing you!” Jack looked at the beauty in front of him. He could not help but say, “No wonder so many rich men like my wife. You being the number-one beauty in Eastfield is really not an overstatement. I must have done something good in my previous life to have you as my wife!”

Selena felt shy and at the same time thought Jack was really sweet after hearing his affectionate words.

“Sometimes I think you’re a little dumb, so I didn’t expect you to say such sweet words!” Selena glanced at Jack and pursed her sexy red lips.

“Bad news. Young Master Hugo is coming with a bunch of people!” She gasped as soon as she finished speaking. A group of people was at the door and many of them were carrying watermelon knives in their hands.

Chapter 82

That person brought more than a dozen people with him. The watermelon knives in their hands looked dazzling. Selena was terrified when she saw so many people approaching with weapons. She looked to her side, Kylie was there. She lunged forward, pulled Kylie to her, and hugged her tightly.

“Jack, what should we do? There are so many people. It seems that they are here for no good!” Selena was so frightened as she hugged Kylie tighter.

“Mummy, don’t be afraid, daddy will beat the bad guys. Daddy is amazing!” Kylie spoke in a childish voice. At the age of four, she was sensible enough to take the initiative to comfort Selena.

“Yes, your father can definitely solve it!” Selena comforted Kylie but her frown deepened.

“Don’t worry. I’m here, no one can touch you!” Jack smiled indifferently and said, “How did I survive on the battlefields throughout the past five years otherwise?”

“Miss Taylor, we meet again.” Young Master Hugo led his people toward Jack and stopped five meters away from him. He laughed and then said as he looked at Selena playfully, “You really are a beautiful woman. You look even more attractive after a shower!”

He paused for a while before continuing, “It’s great. You have already freshened up and are waiting for me. It would save me some trouble for later.”

“A trivial character from a second-class aristocratic family actually has the guts to cause trouble here under bright day light, and even carried weapons? You really have no respect for the law.” Jack smiled coldly and looked at the other party.

“Law?” Young Master Hugo laughed and then said, “I’m rich and powerful. That’s the law! Young man, you look down on second-class aristocratic families, do you know how powerful we are?”

Jack looked at the person contemptuously. “Are you really that powerful? If you are really powerful, why didn’t you bring some decent bodyguards? Do you need to spend money to hire these gangsters? Don’t tell me these sloppy bodyguards are specially trained by your family!”

The corners of Neil Hugo’s mouth twitched and his face darkened. These people were indeed not from the Hugo family. The Hugo family’s practice strict upbringing. They worried that Neil would cause trouble outside posing harm to the Hugo family’s reputation. Therefore, he could not simply take the family’s bodyguards with him. Without his father’s orders, the bodyguards would not obey him.

Normally, the family did not care about how he drove sports cars and toyed women. They thought he would definitely mature in the future. As long as they did not arrange bodyguards for him, and he did not cause trouble outside of home. However, this was nothing to Neil, because Neil had money. As long as he gave some money to these gangsters, they would naturally help him. With less than 100 thousand dollars, he had successfully gathered a dozen people who were prepared to take revenge on Jack.

“young man, you’re really mad. We don’t need the Hugo family’s bodyguards just to deal with you.” Neil’s mouth twitched a few times then stared at Jack with hatred. “Is a dozen of them not enough to deal with you?”

“Yes, young man, you’re outta your mind! If that is the case, we would not hold back!”

Chapter 83

After seeing Jack’s contemptuous expression, one of the gangsters’ leaders got pretty annoyed. As he finished speaking, more than a dozen people stepped forward and surrounded Jack.

“Jack, can...can you handle this? They have knives in their hands!” Selena was so frightened that she took a few steps backward, and she could not help but cover Kylie’s eyes with her hand.

However, Kylie stretched her hand out to push Selena’s hand away. “Come on, Daddy. I want to watch how you beat the bad guys...”

“Honey, don’t worry. As a man, I can’t say I can’t!” Jack turned around, looked at Selena and told her with a smile.

Selena blushed thinking he could still make jokes at this moment.

“Young Master Hugo, what should we do? Should we kill him or what?” the guy who led the gang asked with a smile.

“Kill him?” Young Master Hugo was stunned. “No, no, no. Wouldn’t it be too easy for him if you just kill him? It’s no wonder that this young man is powerful, he is the guy who joined the army and also Selena’s husband!”

He had a smirk on his face as he was speaking. “So, you’re Selena’s husband. If that’s the case, it’ll be fun! Just bash him enough for him to fall but don’t kill him. Later, I want him to look at how I play with his wife!”

“Tsk tsk, Young Master Hugo, you dare to say such words. Today, I’ll teach you a lesson on behalf of your father! If my daughter wasn’t here, I would kill you scumbags now! Since my daughter is here, I don’t want things to get too bloody. Let me teach you all some lessons!” After Jack said this, a fierce murderous intent could be seen in his eyes.

However, when he thought about how bad it would be for Kylie to see him kill so many people and there would be blood everywhere, he could only dispel the idea of starting a killing spree. This was his own home and he did not want to fill the whole yard with blood. Furthermore, it would be difficult for him to hide his identity if he really killed Young Master Hugo and made things worse. He did not want to live as the superior, Supreme Warrior, anymore. He only wanted to guard by the side of his beloved woman.

“Tsk tsk, have you guys heard this? This young man came back as a veteran and thinks he is the hero of the world. Do you really think you’re so strong you can fight against a hundred men, and that you’re a legendary and incomparably powerful general?”

Young Master Hugo heard this and thought the whole situation seemed like a huge joke. He waved his hand and ordered, “What’re you all still waiting for? F*ck him. He is bare-handed. I don’t believe that so many of you cannot give him a few cuts.”

“Listen to me carefully, don’t attack the fatal parts. Just beat him until he falls, don’t kill him! We’re professionals!” shouted the guy who led the team.

“Charge!” Suddenly, the followers yelled and waved the bright watermelon knife in their hands and rushed toward Jack.

Chapter 84

“A bunch of scum!” Jack sneered as he looked at the people rushing toward him.

Although they looked scary with dyed hair and tattoos, they had skinny torsos. Jack could tell at one glance that these people were weak and did not train regularly. They just pretended by holding knives in their hands. These people would die faster than anyone else if they were put onto the battlefield.

“Be careful, Jack!” Selena yelled from behind. She was very anxious when she saw so many people rushing toward Jack.

“Selena, if you agree to play with me now, I would ask them to go easier on your man. These people have no control of themselves and weapons show no mercy. If your husband dies, you can only live as a widow! By then, you might as well marry me, or you can be my secret affair!”

Neil looked at Selena. He could not help but swallow his saliva, his eyes filled with madness and anticipation. When he went to gather these gangsters, he also inquired about Selena’s situation. Upon inquiry, he knew that Selena’s husband was not welcomed in the Taylor family. If that was the case, killing Jack was no difference from killing an outsider. The Taylor family would not bat an eye.

On the other hand, Selena had been driven out by the Taylor family for five years. They would not investigate as long as Selena was not dead. If they really want to hold him accountable, it could be easily settled by offering cash compensation.

He had done such things enough to know. This method worked especially with the daughters of poor families who had no money and power. The families would be more than happy to accept the money he paid, let alone investigate the matter. Furthermore, based on the status of the Hugo family, the Taylor family would not dare to hold him accountable.

“In your dreams!” Selena stared at him fiercely. She would rather die than let such a bastard defile her body.

The look of this guy made Selena feel disgusted. This rich bastard was dishonorable to have toyed with so many women.

“we will know in a while, if I am dreaming or not...” Neil laughed out loud. Before he could finish speaking, the smile on his face froze.

The people that he led here rushed forward but did not manage to even touch Jack’s hair. They got thrown backward and fell heavily on the ground as they wailed in pain.

Those guys were kicked by Jack like footballs. They rolled several meters away and within seconds, nobody was left in front of Jack.

“Goodness gracious, who’s this guy? Why is he so good?” A guy with yellow hair managed to get back up on his feet. His voice was trembling and he dared not step forward.

“Young Master Hugo, he’s definitely not an ordinary person. We can’t handle this, you...you need to think of another way!”

The leader was also kicked and his chest was in pain. It made him wonder if he had a broken bone. He gritted his teeth and waved before fleeing away with his people.

“You...you guys are useless!” Neil looked at the guys who ran away and started cursing. “I’ll take my leave now too!”

He looked at Jack and noticed Jack was looking at him with a smile. He gasped, turned around, and was prepared to escape.

However, Jack lunged forward and blocked Neil’s way. “Young Master Hugo? Wouldn’t I lose all dignity if

I let you leave like this? This isn't a place where you can come and go as you want!"

Chapter 85

"What do you still want? I'm one of the Hugo's..." Neil gritted his teeth, prepared to reveal his identity again.

Slap! Jack turned his hand and slapped Neil real hard. A big palm print flashed red on Neil's face.

"I knew your identity from the start. There's no need for you to introduce yourself!" Jack smiled coldly and said.

"I'm telling you, if you dare to slap me..."

Slap!

"You..."

Slap!

After three consecutive slaps, Neil was so dazed he could see stars and almost fainted.

"Brother, it's all my fault. I don't dare to do it anymore!" Neil was afraid of getting beaten. He knelt and knocked his knees hard on the ground. Then he started begging for mercy.

"Your head would not be at the place it is right now if it wasn't for my daughter, she doesn't have to witness that bloody scene!"

Jack smiled indifferently. He did not use much strength. If he was serious with his slaps, Neil's head would have flown away with just one slap.

"Brother, my bad. You're my brother. I've repented. Please let me go!"

Neil was extremely frightened and almost wet his pants. Jack was a powerful opponent.

"Oh, I have money, I can compensate you..." In order to survive, Neil retrieved his cell-phone. "I will transfer one million to you, please let me go!"

"I'll give you ten seconds to disappear as quickly as possible! And, don't call me brother. I don't have such a rubbish brother!" Jack demanded coldly.

Soon enough, Neil ran back to his sports car and drove away very quickly.

"He has so many sports cars. He crashed a Ferrari this morning and now he's driving a Porsche!" Jack said as he smiled bitterly before turning around to face Selena.

Selena was stunned by then. That was the Hugo family's Second Young Master. Jack slapped him three times... That was too domineering!

Jack seemed to no longer be the food delivery man in her eyes, he was like a god that others dare not violate.

"Great. Daddy is so strong, he chased the bad guys away!" The innocent and naive Kylie clapped her hand in excitement with eyes filled with admiration.

Selena was stunned for a while before she shook her head. She walked toward Jack feeling somewhat confused. "Jack, you're really too powerful. Those gangsters were carrying knives. I had no idea that you

could settle it so quickly! You're unusually strong and fast!"

"Silly. I've survived so many battles and the bloody sea of corpses. How could those untrained and useless gangsters bully me?" Jack laughed. Gently and playfully, he tapped Selena's delicate nose. "I'll protect you and Kylie from today onward!"

Jack's words touched her heart, so much so that she blushed.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 86-90

Chapter 86

"Oh, don't tell mum and the others about what happened just now. They shouldn't have to worry about it!" Jack said to Selena after giving it a thought.

Selena nodded. "Yes, this time we offended the Hugo family's young master. My mother might scold you again if she knew about it!"

She then looked at Kylie, who was in her arms and said, "Kylie, don't tell both your grandmother about how your father beat the bad guys just now!"

"Okay!" Kylie nodded obediently.

It was then when Joan and her maid, Shauna, came back from a walk in the park.

"Kylie, come have a look. See what I got you!" Joan happily presented Kylie a sugar-coated hawthorn fruit stick.

"Wow, it's candied hawthorns!" Kylie was excited seeing the candied hawthorns. She ran toward Joan as Selena put her on the ground.

“By the way, you are going to work tomorrow. Don’t you want to buy better clothes?” Selena looked at Jack.

“There’s no need for that. My current clothes are pretty good. There’s no tear on it, it just looks a little old!” Jack smiled. He did not pay much attention to clothes and food. What he wanted to do most was to make up for what he owed his mother and Selena.

Although, at times, he would feel lazy to deal with Fiona because she treated him snobbishly, he would still repay her for the trouble he had caused them for the past five years.

In the evening, the family happily had dinner together before going to rest.

The next morning, Jack got up early and gave Andrew a second treatment. He then sent Selena to work with his electric scooter.

What Jack did not expect was, Fiona, Ben, and Xena stalked him in a taxi not long after he had left on the electric scooter.

Jack first rode to the Drake Group’s headquarters that belonged to the Drake family, watched as Selena entered the company before riding his scooter to the Drake family mansion.

Fiona, Ben and Xena, on the other hand, sat in a cafe opposite the mansion to observe.

“Mum, is this necessary? It’s really a waste of time to come here just to see if brother-in-law can really be a bodyguard here. Why can’t we just ask him when he gets home?” Ben asked impatiently.

“Brother-in-law? It sounded so natural from your mouth, did he pay you to say that?”

Fiona could not help but roll her eyes at Ben. "Don't you forget. It was this person who caused our family to become what it is today. Otherwise, we wouldn't have a problem getting food on the table for the past five years. If it wasn't for him, your sister would be doing great in the Taylor family. You would definitely not be looked down upon when you go out..."

Ben smiled bitterly. "I hate him, but I can see that he genuinely cares for Selena.. Besides, he also said that he would buy a car for me after he gets his salary. I can choose whatever car I want as long as the price is within one million..."

"You actually believed him? And you'll continue calling him your brother-in-law for that?"

Chapter 87

Fiona glared at Ben and continued, "Aren't you afraid that Miss Tanya fooled him? I'm afraid of that so I came here to see for myself. What if he comes back and lies to us?"

"Ben, I think that what mum said is sensible. What should we do if he was refused by the employer and did not go to work, but comes home and lies to us? So the most insured way is to come over and see if he could start work!"

By their side, Xena also nodded and the three of them looked at the gate.

Jack rode his electric scooter and was about to enter the mansion. However, a few bodyguards who were guarding the door stopped him.

"Young man, what are you doing? Does this look like a place that an electric scooter can go in? Do you know what this place is? The Drake family mansion! Is this a place that someone with an electric scooter can go in?" One of them looked at Jack and said in contempt.

Jack stopped his car by the side and got down from the car, "If my scooter cannot be driven inside, where can I park it?"

“Young man, you’re so funny!” The other person laughed out loud. “The Drake family mansion is very, very big and there is also a specific parking space. Even us, as bodyguards, have parking spaces to park our cars. However, there are no small cars parked there, not to mention electric scooters!”

“That’s right. After all, we as bodyguards have an annual salary of 200 or 300 thousand. We can easily buy a car that’s worth a few hundred thousand, who would ride an electric scooter?!”

The previous man smiled and said, “Oh yes, what do you plan to do here? Are you lost?”

“Oh, I am a new bodyguard here! Miss Tanya hired me!”

Jack smiled, took out his cigarettes before handing it to the others politely.

One of them did not hold back his words, “Young man, are you lying to us? Why would you smoke this cheap cigarette if you are the bodyguard just hired by Miss Tanya? Haha, don’t you feel ashamed when you take out white-sand cigarettes that only cost ten dollars?”

Jack smiled bitterly. He directly placed it into his mouth as they did not want it. He lit it up and took a breath, “In my opinion, it is a good cigarette as long as I like it. I am used to this cigarette and I look down on other expensive ones!”

“Interesting!” The man suddenly laughed, “Then should you say that you are used to riding an electric scooter, so you look down on BMWs and Audis?”

“I do not care much about you guys. I would not come and be the Drake family’s bodyguard if it weren’t for Miss Tanya’s face, together with the fact that she helped my wife and I had free time!” After Jack finished speaking, he wanted to walk inside.

“You came here to be a bodyguard based on Miss Tanya’s face? Are you joking?”

One of the men stood in front of Jack and pushed him, “Not anyone can be the Drake family’s bodyguard. The minimum salary is 20 thousand and the highest can go up to several hundred thousand. There are also commanders with salaries of millions and you dare say you disdain this job? Who are you fooling? Tell us honestly about your identity. Otherwise, don’t even think about entering!”

“Yes, yes, yes. You are not allowed to enter because you are not dressed formally!” The other bodyguard said coldly, “You do not look like someone Miss Tanya would employ. Besides, we recruit bodyguards by getting a group of people and select them through martial art competitions. We normally recruit eight or ten people in an instance. When was there ever someone who came on their own?”

“That’s right. I think he is a con-man. Humph, maybe he wants to go in and steal something!” Another tall guy snorted coldly.

“I am really a bodyguard, but my price is higher than all of you at 20 million per month!”

Chapter 88

The bodyguards almost fainted when they heard what Jack had said. This man was actually bragging that his monthly salary was 20 million?

“you can really brag! Even our commander here does not have such a high salary!” The tall guy waved his hand and said aggressively after he laughed, “Young man, get out of here. I don’t have so much patience to listen to your bragging!”

“yes. This young man is so funny. Is 20 million a month possible? The commander’s salary is only around two million and he actually said that his salary is 20 million!” The other bodyguards also started laughing out loudly.

“I am here for Miss Tanya. This is my first day here and I do not want to cause trouble!”

Jack was too lazy to pay attention to them. He bypassed them and was about to continue his way inside.

“Are you looking for death?” One of the bodyguards had already lost his patience. He squeezed his big fist that was big like a sandbag and directly punched it towards Jack’s face. The speed was very fast and was accompanied by the sound of whooshing gust.

Since the opponent had already made a move, Jack did not hold back and blasted the opponent backward several steps with a punch.

“Why did they start fighting?” Inside the tea-house, Fiona took a deep breath as she was looking at the entrance.

“Oh my god, they had really started fighting. It seems that they didn’t want to let Jack enter but he bit the bullet and wanted to break in!”

Ben inhaled a cool breath and was really taken aback.

“It’s over, it’s over. It seems that Miss Tanya had played Jack and what she said the other day was just making fun of him!”

“Jack is indeed terrible. Just let it go if they don’t let him in, but he still wants to force his way in. Wouldn’t we offend the Drake family if he hurt the Drake family’s bodyguard?”

Xena was also frightened that her face turned pale.

Fiona grew increasingly afraid as she heard this.

It was still slightly better when Jack offended Young Master Clark. After all, she was not afraid although the Clark family was a second-class aristocratic family, because they had to consider the honor of the Taylor family. Apart from that, Young Master Clark was not a crude person who was completely unreasonable and he loved her daughter.

However, it would really be over if Jack offended the Drake family. After all, James Drake was the wealthiest person in Eastfield. The entire Drake family was stronger than any so-called first-class aristocratic family and seemed to still be independently expanding. Nobody can save Jack if he offended the Drake family and it might even hurt them and the Taylor family.

“This rubbish is really making me mad. He only knows how to do things recklessly!” Fiona gritted her teeth with anger, “He previously slapped Ivan, then he slapped Young Master Clark several times. Now, he even dares to provoke the Drake family’s bodyguards. He had only been back for two or three days, but he had already fought for a few times. What a reckless man!”

“Yes, yes, yes. Does this guy still think that he is on the battlefield and he can be unscrupulous? These people are not from the enemy country!” Xena also nodded her head continuously. She thought about it and looked at Fiona with panic written all over her face, “Mum, would it hurt us if Jack causes trouble again? After all, he is Ben’s brother-in-law...”

“Who said that he is Ben’s brother-in-law? I did not accept him. Humph, it’s better if such a person quickly leaves the Taylor family.” Fiona’s face turned blue with anger. When they were speaking, Jack had already caused two bodyguards to drop on the ground and the situation was already out of control.

Chapter 89

“It makes sense as this guy is very powerful. If he only wanted a salary of 20 to 30 thousand, Miss Tanya would have definitely agreed with him. Who knew that he would be so greedy? This is just great, Miss Tanya fooled him, did not let him in and he actually wants to break in!”

Xena said again, “Now, he not only fails to be a bodyguard, it would be pretty good if this does not hurt your family!”

“It’s over. If this happens, does it mean that the car within a million promised to me is gone?” Ben had a bitter expression on his face and was sad. He thought that he could get a nice car but it seems that his dream had been completely destroyed.

“You are still thinking of the car? I did not take it seriously when he said it!” Xena hugged her hands in front of her chest and said.

“Let’s go back, I’m really mad! The more I look at it, the angrier I get!” Fiona was so angry that she almost vomited blood when she looked at the bodyguards by the gate that were beaten by Jack till they were lying on the ground. How was it possible to not offend the Drake family under these circumstances?

The three of them immediately left in a taxi.

...

“Young man, you...you are the worst. I am telling you, you...you are done!”

After the tall bodyguard spoke, he took out the walkie-talkie and shouted, “Big brothers on the inside, we need support. Someone wants to break into the Drake family mansion and we are not his match!”

“Young man, you’re dead. We are the lowest level bodyguards that take care of the front gate so our salaries are not high!”

“Humph, Drake family’s bodyguards that are patrolling inside are all talented and they are amazing!”

One of the guys lying on the ground did a cold snort and his eyes were full of resentment.

Jack did not pay attention to that person and walked in step by step.

He had to admit that this Drake family mansion was really extravagant.

They were able to own such a wide land in this busy downtown area and villas were built on it. The greenery area was so big that it was scary and the villas were surrounded by high walls. Apart from the Drake family, only the few first-class aristocratic families can manage to do this.

“Who is that? How dare he break into our Drake family mansion?”

“Yes, f*ck his grandmother. Is this person looking for death? He does not know what kind of place the Drake family mansion is?”

“I f*ck his uncle! This is the first time I have encountered such a thing since the five or six years I became a bodyguard in the Drake family!”

Few bodyguards who listened to the walkie-talkie were extremely surprised. Such things had never happened. They had been living freely in the Drake family mansion. When nothing happened, they would just walk the grounds or gather in the bodyguards’ dormitory to play cards. It was extremely enjoyable.

No one dared to offend them due to the Drake family’s name so they basically had nothing to do.

Unexpectedly, someone dared to break in today.

“Harvey, quickly go over and take a look. Teach that person a good lesson!” One of the head commanders said coldly.

“Yes!” The assistant commander immediately waved his hand and ran over to the gate with several bodyguards.

After a while, some people came from another direction. There were more than 20 bodyguards who wore white shirts and black pants and they stopped Jack.

“Young man, you are really extremely courageous. You even dare to hit the Drake family’s bodyguards!”

Chapter 90

“Your people were the ones who refused to let me enter and they made the first move!”

Jack smiled indifferently. He had almost finished smoking the cigarette. After extinguishing it, he flicked his finger and it flew right into the trash can not far away.

“young man, tell us why should our people let you in? Who do you think you are? You don’t look like a rich person. Tell us, what is your purpose of coming here?” The assistant commander whose name was Harvey laughed and asked.

“Harvey, this young man said that he is a bodyguard hired by Miss Tanya and he said that he has a monthly salary of 20 million. We did not believe in him and stopped him from entering. Then, he barged in by force!”

The few that climbed up from the floor had a hard to look at expression on their face and immediately shouted to this side.

“20 million a month?” The man named Harvey sneered after he heard this, “Young man, you don’t even know how to lie. That’s just sad!”

“Commander Harvey, let me meet him. It’s been a long time since I moved my muscles!” It was a tall man with a fat face and a very vicious look. His stature was estimated to be 1.9 meters and he looked very burly.

He took a few steps forward with clenched fists.

“That’s fine too. Teach this young man a lesson, it would be best if you can beat him till he’s disabled!” Harvey nodded in satisfaction and said with a playful expression.

“No problem!” The burly man had a very thick and deep voice. After he finished speaking, he rushed a few steps forward and his huge fist came straight for Jack.

Jack took a step, jumped up and directly kicked the opponent’s chest.

The opponent’s huge body was actually kicked upside down and flew back several meters before hitting the ground. The most surprising thing was that this bodyguard, who had amazing combat ability and a very strong body, spurted out a mouthful of blood and his face turned pale.

“No way! Henry Liam had very powerful combat power and he’s much better than the other bodyguards of other families!”

“Yes, he was a retired mercenary. It was said that he killed quite a number of people and he is still not this person’s opponent?”

Many bodyguards that were waiting for a good show almost had their jaws dropped to the ground out of surprise. Jack’s strength had exceeded their expectations.

“Oh my, the Drake family’s bodyguards only have such little ability!” Jack glanced at Henry and shook his head. The fighting power of the Drake family’s bodyguard was really much weaker than what he had in mind.

“Ah!” The guy named Henry became very angry when he heard what Jack said. He directly slapped his

hand on the ground and stood up with a carp-like flip. He roared again and rushed towards Jack again like a scary tiger.

Pitifully, his attack did not even touch a single piece of Jack's hair and he was directly kicked away by Jack again. Once again, he hit the ground and a mouthful of blood poured out.

"This young man is really good. Get a few of you to go forward and attack!" The young man saw this and immediately said to several bodyguards next to him. No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 91-95

Chapter 91

"It's not so good to let so many people bully a loner!" Jack gave an insouciant smile and reacted instantly. In the eyes of those bodyguards, he was like a phantom. They were knocked out one by one as Jack swung by in a blur.

"Come on. Come on up together!" After Jack finished with those guys, he beckoned to Harvey and the remaining bodyguards.

"Commander Harvey, you, go on!"

One of the bodyguards was obviously scared witless. He saw how fast Jack was and he knew he would not be able to keep up with the speed. There was no way he could beat Jack at that speed.

Commander Harvey could imagine himself wiping the cold sweat away on his forehead. He was an amazing fighter himself. He had no problem fighting off four hundred to five hundred people single-handedly usually. However, he was overwhelmed at Jack's speed just now and he was nowhere up to that standard.

"What's wrong? Shouldn't you be setting an example, Commander?" Jack sneered as his eyes locked on Harvey. "You were pretty fierce just now, weren't you?"

“Motherf*cker, do you think you can step all over me just because I don’t flex my muscles?” Although Harvey had no confidence in winning the duel, he balled his fists up nonetheless and was prepared to fight Jack.

“Stop it!” At the nick of time, an extremely pleasant voice sounded. Harvey breathed a sigh of relief and stopped dead in his tracks.

“What are you doing?” Not far away from them, Tanya came into sight with two or three bodyguards.

“Miss Tanya, we stopped this b*stard from breaking into Drake Residence. As a result, he injured so many of our brothers!”

Harvey reported to Miss Tanya immediately. “Miss Tanya, this kid was bragging that he is your bodyguard with a monthly salary of twenty million dollars. Pfft, he must be talking through his hat!”

Another guy got up from the ground and stared at Jack bitterly. “Miss Tanya is here. Let’s see what nonsense you can pull to save your *ss!”

Jack looked at the guy with a grin on his face, completely unconcerned.

Miss Tanya appeared somewhat uneasy. After a while, she forced a wry smile. “Jack, I’m really sorry. I had so much to do after coming back yesterday that I forgot to inform the gatekeeper. They didn’t know that you are coming this morning! So...don’t take it to heart!”

The bodyguards went wide-eyed after hearing that. They could not believe their ears. It seemed like Jack was indeed one of them. Moreover, Miss Tanya obviously knew him well and even told him not to be bothered by the hostility. Why did Miss Tanya talk to him so politely?

“That’s fine. Friendship grows from the exchange of blows. It’s good that I get to see the strength of your bodyguards and know how they are!” Jack waved his hand indifferently.

“So, what do you think of them? Not bad, huh?” Tanya was quite confident of her bodyguards.

However, Jack’s face suggested that he did not share the same thought. “They are just a little better than ordinary people. Just a bunch of rice buckets to me!”

“Rice bucket?” Harvey almost passed out of anger when he heard it. In Eastfield, they were the best among the best, specially hand-picked from a reputable bodyguard company. Yet, the bastard called them rice buckets!

Tanya’s face sank. Jack was brutally honest.

“Miss Tanya, are you upset? I like to be frank!”

Chapter 92

“Miss Tanya, do you really want him to be your bodyguard? He is such an arrogant fella!”

There was a guy with a long and gloomy face, he felt like bashing Jack up.

That was what he did a moment ago. Unfortunately, before he could even get near to Jack, he was sent off with a kick.

“He is the bodyguard I hired yesterday! Jack White!” Tanya introduced with a sweet smile. “His salary is indeed twenty million dollars a month. If you guys are not happy about it, feel free to take on him!”

At this point, Tanya smiled at Jack. “Mr. Jack, I believe that you wouldn’t mind being challenged if you

think they are merely rice buckets!”

“Of course!” Jack replied calmly.

“Motherf*cker, show me what you’ve got. I will challenge you today!” Harvey was pissed the more he thought about it. He had never been called a rice bucket all his life; never been looked down in such a way before.

“So, it’s true that he is getting twenty million dollars. Commander Harvey, come on! Let us see if this bastard is worth the price!”

Those bodyguards recovered from the shock after hearing Jack’s income. They were hissing remarks through clenched teeth as hatred engulfed them.

“Boy, don’t accuse me of bullying you. I am best at throwing knives!” After careful considerations, Harvey took out several knives and mocked at Jack.

“Yes. Commander Harvey, this guy is fast and powerful. I’m sure it would work if you throw your knives!” A bodyguard and said immediately.

He knew how fast and accurate Commander Harvey was at throwing knives. He was certain that Jack would not have a chance to even get close to Harvey.

“Well. If you are good at throwing knives, then, I’m good at catching knives!” Jack replied casually.

The corner of Harvey’s mouth twitched upon hearing the comment. That guy had the cheek to joke about it. Harvey narrowed his eyes slightly as he aimed the knife. With a wave of his hand, a glint of light flew out of his hand surprisingly fast.

That knife was sent flying across at a terrifying speed. It made a sound of wind breaking which was almost unnoticeable by ordinary people.

However, in the next second, Jack stretched out his palm and stopped mid-air. The flying knife was sandwiched between his index and middle fingers.

“No way, how could he stop that? It was so fast!” That was coming from a slightly chubby bodyguard. After witnessing the scene, his eyes were wide opened.

“At such speed, the momentum and impact would be very strong. The blade of Harvey’s flying knife would usually be buried in the trunk if it hits a tree. Yet, this guy can catch it between his fingers!”

Another bodyguard was also awe-stricken. A bodyguard that was paid with a salary of twenty million dollars a month seemed to be really unusual.

“Huh! The show has just begun!” Harvey’s face sank. The five knives left in his hand were flicked out at the same time, all aiming directly at Jack.

They were fired at the same speed but attacked from different positions.

“I want to see how you can take down so many flying knives at once!” Harvey ridiculed Jack in his heart. He had perfected the art of throwing knives. He was certain that Jack would not be able to catch any of his knives.

Then again, the disadvantage of throwing so many knives at the same time was that the power of attack would be weakened. Besides, it would be difficult to aim at the target. If the target was too far away, it was difficult for all five knives to hit the target.

Chapter 93

Fortunately, Jack was not far from Harvey; just a few meters away. Harvey had a higher probability to hit his target.

Jack reacted instantly. He was moving at an appalling speed that no one could see how he did it. All they could see was him waving his hands. When he stopped, there were five more knives in his hands. Adding in the previous one, there were six knives in total.

“Damn...” Harvey swallowed his saliva in an attempt to calm himself down. He was shocked that Jack could catch all the knives. It happened so fast that he did not see what was going on, yet those knives ended up in Jack’s hands.

He knew very well that even the Head Commander would rather dodge his five knives and plan for a counter-attack than catching them with his bare hands under the same situation.

By Jack taking all the knives down, he proved that he was better than the Head commander in terms of speed, agility, and other aspects.

Tanya’s eyes lit up in excitement when she saw what happened. Jack’s ability was proven and she was reassured that he was worth the hefty twenty million dollars of monthly salary.

“It’s my turn! I’m not good at throwing knives, but perhaps I should give it a go!”

Feeling intrigued, Jack just smiled and tossed the six knives at Harvey.

“No!”

Harvey was terribly scared. The guy claimed that he was not an expert but he threw the knives anyway. Miss Tanya was just right beside him and he was worried about the speed of the knives that Jack sent across.

The worst nightmare was that if Jack was not good at it, the knives might miss him and hit Miss Tanya

instead.

Some of the other bodyguards were also taken aback when they heard Jack. He wanted to give it a try.

“Swish! Swish! Swish!”

The six knives flew out at top speed and ended up where Harvey was in a short period of time.

“Argh!”

Before Harvey could react, he felt a gush of pain in six places at the same time. The powerful force blasted him into the air. He was seen coughing out a mouthful of blood.

It’s over. I’m dead, a knife is stuck in my heart!”

Harvey laid on the ground in distress. He could feel the knife pierced through his chest.

Clang! Clang! Clang! He heard the sound of the knives fell to the ground.

“What just happened? I...I’m not dead?” Harvey touched his body and checked his hands. He found no traces of blood.

He sat up in a daze. He looked at the ground with his pale face just to find all six knives on the ground without blood on any of them.

“How come there is no blood?”

Harvey stood up, his face was full of disbelief. “What just happened?”

Jack frowned bitterly. "Sigh, what bad luck. How come you were only hit by the hilt!"

The people around felt like their hearts almost leaped out of their throats. All of the knives' handles hit the target. No way that was pure luck.

In other words, Jack did it on purpose.

"Thank you for not killing me!" Unknowingly, cold sweat broke out on Harvey. He was scared. Without thinking, he joined his hands in salutation and bowed to thank Jack.

"Why thank me? It's your luck!" Jack smiled lightly before continuing. "By the way, is there anyone else here who wants to challenge me?"

Chapter 94

Lucky? The people around were not fools. All those six knives hit Harvey with their hilts. Obviously, that was no coincidence. Besides, Harvey was the commander of the team. If he was not an opponent of Jack, who would dare to challenge Jack?

"You are really amazing! Let's go, I don't think they are your match. I will take you to meet my father, my grandfather, and my elder brother! After seeing them, I will arrange your accommodation. Of course, if you have no plans in the afternoon, you can pick your wife up from work. If you have something, you are free to go out anytime. You can rest at the Drake Residence as well. You can live in any place as you wish!" Tanya smiled faintly and then walked toward inside with Jack.

Those bodyguards were exchanging looks. They were again, dumbfounded.

"Did I hear it right? Did she just say that he could just get off work anytime he wants?"

“Yes, and he doesn’t need to live in Drake Residence. He could just come over and have a look at any time.”

The bodyguards were completely stunned. This guy was paid with a salary of twenty million dollars and yet he gets to enjoy the most freedom among them. Who the hell was that? The leader of the Drakes was too kind to him.

...

“Grandpa, Father, Brother, this is Jack White!”

Tanya brought Jack to meet Old Master Drake and the others and introduced him to her family with a smile on her face.

“So, you are Jack White?” Timothy Drake looked at Jack, then frowned and asked, “Why didn’t you put on something more decent on your first day working at the Drake Residence?”

Jack replied casually to the question. “In my opinion, these clothes are fine. Clothes are like human hearts. It is of utmost importance to maintain its cleanliness. As long as one has a clean heart, everything would appear clean in one’s eyes!”

“You...” Timothy was infuriated. The b*stard was obviously mocking him, was he not?

He was paid to be their bodyguard so they were his boss. How could he talk to him with such an attitude?

“You’re right!” Before Timothy could finish his sentence, Old Master Drake was seen nodding in agreement at the side. “I have made it to this day with a poor and hard past. When I was young, all I wore was stitched and patched up clothes, but one thing for sure, I kept my clothes clean. It reflects the attainment of a person!”

Timothy was forced to hold his tongue, so he felt a little unhappy.

“Jack, we haven’t seen each other for a long time. You are welcome to join our Drake Family! Don’t hesitate to tell us whatever you need in the future!”

What made him even more speechless was that his father by his side was also talking very politely to Jack.

However, after Timothy thought about it, he found a way to tease Jack.

He smiled faintly and said, “Jack, this is how we run here. The Drake Family has a rule that whenever we have a new recruit, he should battle with one of our bodyguards to show us his strength. This would help us to understand how skillful he is!”

Having said that, he crafted his words to sound subtle. “Don’t be offended. This is not against you. We have always been choosing our bodyguards like this. Although my sister has promised to let you work for us, I feel like we should still walk through the procedure. Otherwise, I am afraid that some bodyguards will not be convinced after knowing your pay scale!”

Jack became dazed for a moment before replying indifferently. “Just bring anyone that is still not convinced. Since this is the rule of the Drake Family, then I should indeed go by the rules!”

Timothy was delighted that Jack agreed to his suggestion so easily. “That’s good, so I’ll go and get someone to battle with you. How about that?”

Jack nodded, turned around, and walked toward the door.

James was going to say something about his son’s rude behavior. He had reminded his son repeatedly

that Jack had quite a high status; he was a good friend of the God of War. To please Jack was to please the God of War.

Chapter 95

Then again, he was also curious about Jack's ability. Jack was paid a hefty salary of twenty million dollars a month. It would be frustrating if he was not worth the price. Besides, he did not bother to stop since Jack agreed to it.

As soon as Timothy left the house, he saw Harvey walking further ahead with a few bodyguards. His heart thumped with joy. Harvey was very powerful and the strongest among the Commanders.

He immediately waved his hand and shouted, "Harvey, come over and try it out with this new bodyguard. We'll just take it easy. After all, we are family!"

Timothy's mouth twitched into a smile. He could not wait to see Jack make a fool of himself. If Jack could not even beat Harvey, he would be embarrassed about getting paid with such a high salary, would he not?

Tanya, who was at the side, chuckled uncontrollably.

"Why are you laughing?" Timothy frowned, he was puzzled.

"No, nothing?" Tanya was holding her belly.

At the same time, Harvey and the other bodyguards turned around. There were several bodyguards who had blood dripping from the corners of their mouths, and some even had visible footprints on their chests.

Harvey was not spared. The blood around the corners of his mouth had not dried up. He asked bitterly,

“Eldest Young Master, is Jack the new bodyguard you are talking about?”

“Harvey, what’s the matter with you guys?” Timothy gasped. “Were you guys beaten up by someone? No way! Even you were injured? Who’s the motherf*cker?”

“Harvey, who the hell did this to you?” James was also surprised. Who could have bashed them up under broad daylight?

“Young Master Timothy, it was the new bodyguard. We had a misunderstanding just now as we didn’t know that he was hired as a bodyguard, so our people started a fight with him. This is the result... Some have gone off to rest. Their injuries are far worse than ours!”

Harvey peeped at Jack who was next to him with a grimacing smile. There was fear in his gaze.

“Yeah, Young Master Timothy, Harvey had a go with him just now and he lost miserably!” The other bodyguard lowered his head and said embarrassedly.

“So, you guys have tested him. Then, he passed!” Timothy’s mouth twitched and his heart quivered in shock. Even Harvey was injured. It seemed like Jack had a thing or two. His ability was probably comparable to the Head Commander.

“Okay, go!” Tanya waved her hand with a smile, and then said to Jack. “Let’s go, Jack. I will arrange a place for you!”

After thinking about it, James spoke. “Tanya, you don’t need to arrange a dormitory for Jack. Your cousin rarely comes back to live in her villa. Just get him a room there since there are so many empty rooms!”

Harvey and the others were envious of the special treatment that Jack got.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 96-100

Chapter 96

“Okay. Jack, let’s go!” Tanya placed her hands behind her back as she led Jack away to a villa not far away with a smile on her face.

After Jack left, James’ expression sank. He said to Timothy, “Timothy, what did I tell you? No matter how Jack’s strength is, we should be polite to him. After all, we can’t trace any record of this kid in the army, where he spent five years. As Spectre speculated, his information might be in the top-secret files!”

Timothy lowered his head and said softly. “Father, I am not being disrespectful to him. I just feel like he is overpaid with twenty million dollars as monthly salary. I think it is a little too high for a bodyguard, so I want to try him out to see how skillful he is.”

At this point, he raised his head and smiled calmly. “Now, it seems that he is very capable. Such ability must be a top gun in the army. No wonder he knew the God of War!”

“Well, I guess, this kid must be an officer, perhaps he is a marshal!”

“There is a possibility that he doesn’t want to reveal his identity!” James nodded and said.

...

At the same time, Fiona and the others had returned home. They all wore embarrassing looks on their faces.

“Where have you all been? Why are you all wearing this expression?” Andrew saw the three of them, and he could not hide his contented smile. “Hey, let me tell you some good news. Jack is really amazing. My legs are obviously better now than before. I can feel it this time, it’s definitely not an illusion. It’s

only two days and I've already felt so much better. If I carry on the treatment for seven days according to what he said, my leg can be healed!"

"Really? Congratulations!" Joan, who was listening by the side, gave a satisfied smile and said, "I really didn't expect that my son has learned some medical knowledge in the past five years which I didn't see him. It seems that he went through a lot in the past five years. He has grown and made progress!"

"Yes, yes. Your son is indeed amazing. He's so amazing that he even dared to bash up the people from Drake Family. Huh, I think he is getting us all in trouble!" Fiona got angrier and angrier as she thought about it. She rebuked with a cold face.

"What are you talking about, in-law? Did you say that Jack beat someone from the Drake Family? How did it happen? Didn't he go to the Drake Family as a bodyguard? How could he beat someone up from the Drake Family?"

Joan's face turned pale when she heard about the news. The Drake Family was the most formidable family in Eastfield.

"Why would I lie to you? We saw it with our own eyes!"

Xena added immediately. "We saw it with our own eyes that the bodyguards of the Drake Family refused to let Jack enter the Drake Residence. Jack insisted on barging in so they started the fight!"

"Yeah, the point is that he is so good. He beat all the bodyguards who stood guarded to the ground. What would the Drake Family think about this? The bodyguards who guarded the gate were just ordinary bodyguards. Those bodyguards inside were the real masters!"

Andrew sneered. "Why would the Drake Family give twenty million dollars of monthly salary to Jack, a veteran who is not well-known, to be their bodyguard? That second young miss must be poking fun with him!"

Joan could not help but take two steps back in fright, she almost fainted. She was worried sick. She had no idea if Jack's job was legit. She had been at home and was waiting for Jack's news. Unexpectedly, she was greeted with such horrible news.

"No way! Was he so reckless?" Andrew frowned. If that was true, his family might be affected.

"We saw it with our own eyes. Do you think it's true? Initially, we just wanted to secretly send him off and watch him go to work on the first day. Unexpectedly, we saw such a terrible scene..."

Fiona looked sincere with the sad look on her face. "What do we do now?"

Chapter 97

Fiona was very anxious. She panicked. "What do we do? Anyway, he was the one who did it. It has nothing to do with our family! Besides, I have never admitted that he is our son-in-law!" Fiona made her stand clear immediately.

"Yes, I don't have a brother-in-law like him!" Ben turned against Jack without hesitating. The word 'brother-in-law' which he called out kindly yesterday was forgotten.

On the other side, Selena's first day at work went smoothly. She did not expect that the Drake Family was planning to invest in a large project in the south of the city. They bought a large piece of land and were developing it into a high-end residential area. As a newly appointed Procurement Manager, she was solely responsible for the procurement of the building materials. Selena was flattered. The Drake family even arranged a Procurement Supervisor to share some of her workloads. This supervisor, called Sonia Neal, was a distant relative of the Drake family.

"Sonia, let's work hard together in the future!" Selena smiled. She was sitting in the office as she said that to Sonya who was in front of her.

"Miss Selena is so polite. You are the manager and I am the supervisor. I should listen to you and do things according to your instruction!" Sonya smiled, but she had implied meanings in her statement.

After that, she thought for a while and then added. "By the way, Miss Selena, I remember that your family is in the building materials business too. Would you be benefiting your own family with such a big project? You're from the Taylor Family, right? We need to be professional and not cooperate with the Taylor family just because you are part of the family!"

The corners of Selena's mouth twitched slightly before she forced a smile and said, "If this is the case, you don't need to worry about it, Sonia. You just need to do your job well. I know what to do with this procurement and I will not take care of the Taylor family because of my relationship with the family!"

"Oh, that would be the way!" Sonia sneered coldly and then said, "After all, this project is too big. In terms of building materials, it is not difficult to earn hundreds of millions. If the profits are larger, the developer may rake in billions! "

"I know this. In the next few days, please allow us to check the situation!" Selena waved her hand at last. "Well, if there is nothing wrong, Supervisor Sonia will go ahead and work on it!"

"Ok!" Sonia was about to quit, but after she thought about it, she stopped and said to Selena. "By the way, Miss Selena, it's your first day at work today, and you became our department's manager. You see, the colleagues in this department are all very tired. Perhaps Miss Selena should take us out for a celebration? Celebrating your role as a manager and also to allow everyone to unwind. What do you think?"

"That's true, everyone should just go out, relax and talk more!" Selena nodded. "You go arrange for it. After all, you must be familiar with them."

"Okay, I will make the arrangements!" After Sonia turned around, a triumphant smile crept into the corner of her mouth.

Chapter 98

After Sonya left, Selena leaned back on her chair and frowned. "It seems that this supervisor is very

unhappy with me. Moreover, she is also forcing me to treat them. If I don't agree, she will probably b*tch about me being stingy and refusing to take them out after becoming a manager! Forget it, fortunately, Jack gave me nine hundred thousand dollars yesterday and my mom gave me a hundred thousand dollars. That should be enough for a meal, right?" Selena smiled bitterly and was no longer brooding over it.

At that same time, a man in his fifties from the Taylor family returned with excitement. He immediately summoned the Old Master Taylor and the other members of the Taylor family together.

"Uncle Timmy, what's the matter?"

Ivan quipped lazily while studying the man in front of him.

He was in a terrible mood that day. He was planning for a celebration at the hotel yesterday and to show off his achievement to Selena and the others, but it turned out to be a disaster. Unexpectedly, he ended up abashed. After recovering from his hangover, he realized that Miss Tanya was blind to have hired trash like Jack to be the Drake family's bodyguard. He was paid a twenty million monthly salary. Besides, he was shocked that even Selena landed a job with Drake family. Miss Tanya introduced her to be Procurement Manager.

"There are two things, one is about Jack and the other is about Selena! I have bad news Jack, and good news about Selena! Which one do you want to hear first?" Timmy grinned and asked.

"Let's listen to the bad news first!" Theodore answered after a moment of silence.

Then, Timmy continued. "Someone from our company happened to pass by the Drake Residence today. Guess what he saw?"

Old Master Taylor was upset, he complained coldly. "Why do you keep asking us to guess? Just say it, don't be mysterious about it!"

Timmy pouted his lips before saying, “He saw Jack arriving at the Drake Residence on his electric scooter. But the point is that Jack ended up in a fight!”

While talking, Timmy took out his phone, launched the WeChat app, and then clicked on a video that was sent to him. “Look, this was taken by the employee. Tsk...tsk...No one allowed him into the house but he insisted on entering. In the end, several bodyguards who guarded the gate were knocked down!”

“Really!” Ivan looked at him and was ecstatic. He pretended to say, “It’s strange, isn’t he going to work? Why won’t they let him in?”

Cecelia did not even think about it. She took a step forward and said, “Do you still need to talk about it? You didn’t see his lofty attitude yesterday. He was so arrogant, acting as if Miss Tanya begged him to be a bodyguard. Don’t mention how arrogant, it seems that Miss Tanya asked him to be a bodyguard. He demanded a minimum salary of twenty million dollars a month. He agreed because the Drake Family gave a job to his sister. In this case, do you think Miss Tanya would agree? Did she agree to it?”

Speaking of that, Cecelia paused before continuing. “Miss Tanya was just teasing him. She was just having fun with him so that he would go in today and end up in a mess.”

Ivan nodded immediately. “It’s just that the other party did not expect that Jack would hit their bodyguards. He is in for the trouble big time.”

“Oh, dear!” Timmy slapped his thigh. “So that was bad news. We also said yesterday that he was the son-in-law of the Taylor family. I was thinking about getting closer to the Drake family... Will this hurt our family?”

Chapter 99

“Don’t worry. If that happens, we just won’t recognize him as our son-in-law! After all, everyone knows the agreement we had with him. Even Young Master Michael knows about it. We had a one-month agreement with Jack. Furthermore, if we recognize him, we would not have driven both him and Selena

out of the Taylor family!” said Ivan.

The Old Master nodded. “It is true, we have not recognized him, so he is not one of the Taylor family!” Speaking of that, the old master paused and asked, “By the way, what’s the good news you mention about Selena? Did she really work with the Drake family?”

Timmy had a straight face. “Old Master, didn’t everyone know about this yesterday? Besides, Selena is capable. A monthly salary of one million dollars is not too high. After all, it is the Drake Family that she is working for and she is a manager!”

“In that case, what is the good news?” Ivan frowned, so everyone was puzzled.

“I heard that the Drake Family bought a piece of land in the south of the city. You all knew how big the land is! The most important thing is that the Drake Family is going to develop a real estate project on it, the South City Real Estate! In the future, it will be built into a high-end residential area! They would need a lot of building materials! The Procurement Manager who is responsible for purchasing the building materials is Miss Selena who just started to work with them. Now, isn’t this fantastic news?” Timmy said, his eyes were gleaming with excitement.

“For such a large project, a lot of building materials are needed. I estimate that we could make at least 700 or 800 million dollars out of it. There may be a possibility to make a billion dollars!”

“Oh my goodness, such a huge profit! The land over there is indeed big and it could make so much money!”

“Great, Miss Selena is the person in charge so they can approach the Taylor family for purchasing those materials!”

A few relatives of the Taylor family were hyped after hearing the news.

“If this is the case, wouldn’t we, the Taylor family become a second-class aristocratic family sooner?” Theodore’s eyes lit up. He did not expect to be showered with such a blessing.

Old Master Taylor frowned. “Indeed it is good news. I feel a little unrealistic that Selena is given such a big project to handle as a new recruit!”

“Sigh. Father, you have thought too much. Who cares as long as we can make money out of it!” Theodore said with a smile. “We never had such a good opportunity before. Besides, our building materials are of high-quality and they fulfil the standard. If we work well with the Drake Family this time, won’t we have a better chance in the future? We will definitely be able to progress into a second-class aristocratic family step by step and become stronger!”

The old master thought about that and forced a smile. “It’s just that we have driven them out of the Taylor Family for five years. In the past five years, we have pretty much ignored them. Besides, Ivan had also secretly hampered Selena from looking for a job. If we go to Selena, would she refuse to help us?”

Everyone’s face sank upon hearing that.

“Not to worry. My cousin is kind-hearted. She is not that kind of person. After all, she is part of the Taylor family, so she should think about us!” Ivan said after pondering momentarily. “I’ll apologize to her if that is such a big deal. Earlier, I was angry at her that she chose to be a loser...”

Chapter 100

“Yes, that should work. Selena is part of our Taylor family. Who else would she benefit such a big project to, if not us?” Cecelia commented immediately with a smile. If the Taylor family could make it to a second-class aristocratic family, she would be confident, going out in the future with that sort of family background.

When the time comes, those young ladies from the third-class aristocratic family who were close to her would be envious of her. They would be trying to please her, would they not?

“Yes, Selena is part of us, so she would naturally take care of us!” Theodore nodded after processing the idea through his mind. He looked at Ivan and said, “Ivan, you must be sincere if you were to apologize to her. Got it?”

“Don’t worry. I will be sincere for sure!” Ivan said with a reassuring smile, “I have thought about it. As long as she takes care of our family and lets us make some money, I can give her some rebates...”

“You have to be careful about this kind of thing. No one else should know about this. If someone else finds out, Selena would get a bad name for accepting rebates. Selena has just started working with the Drake family and she has yet to gain their trust!”

Old Master Taylor was not keen on relying on the relationship to get the project, but he was tempted by the opportunity to make it to a second-class aristocratic family, so he compromised in the end. As long as the quality of the building materials supplied by the Taylor family is good, the Drake Family would not have much to say...

That was indeed a great opportunity for the Taylor family. This project would be ongoing for at least two to three years. Once they have struck the deal, the Taylor family would be comfortable for at least two or three years.

...

After Sonia left Selena’s office, she appeared quickly in front of the other staff of the procurement department and clapped her hands together. “I’ll tell everyone a piece of good news. This afternoon, we will not work overtime. We’ll all leave work the usual time...”

As soon as she made the announcement, the employees were very happy. Many jumped with excitement.

“Wait. Hold on, I haven’t finished yet!”

Sonya waved her hand to signal everyone to remain quiet. Then, she continued. "Our new manager just asked me to inform everyone that tonight, she will be taking us to eat and sing karaoke at the best hotel. How about a good night out at the best KTV?"

"Wow, that's great!"

"Yes, this new manager is really fantastic!"

"Are you saying that we are going to a six-star hotel? The best hotel in Eastfield is the six-star hotel that has just opened! Are we really going there?"

The employees were all over the moon. Sonia stood there, sneering in her heart. It was a grave mistake for Selena to get her to make the arrangements. That gave her the chance to make some really 'good arrangements'. She spread the news to everyone. If they ended up not going to the best hotel or the best KTV, Selena would be losing face.

"Okay, everyone, let's continue to work, I'll call up and make the bookings!" No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 101-105

Chapter 101

After Sonia made the announcement, she went straight to the corridor outside and made the call. Another female employee who had a good relationship with her came up to her after she hung up the call.

"Supervisor, you have been working hard for the Drake family for several years. How could they not give you credit for your hard work? Shouldn't you be promoted to a manager already? The company had a vacancy for the Procurement Manager, but that was not a good enough reason to make Selena one, right?" The female employee remarked after she joined Sonia.

Sonia was very angry as the employee had just spoken what was on her mind. Her face turned ugly

because of the rage that was boiling within her.

She tried her very best to force a smile. "Sigh, well, she is very capable and she was recruited by Miss Tanya. The General Manager said that she was appointed by Miss Tanya personally. Besides, Selena was already showing her ability as a strong career lady back then when she was part of the Taylor family!"

"F*ck it. I heard that she was kicked out of the Taylor family five years ago. Someone saw her picking up trash to sell. I don't know what made Miss Tanya see her."

The employee was also angry. "Think about it, you have spent your youth for this company. If the woman hadn't appeared out of nowhere suddenly, you would have been made the manager! Even if she were to join the company, she should start as a supervisor and you as the manager!"

Sonia bit her teeth and mocked. "Huh, let's see how long she can remain in this position. If she doesn't do well, she will have to be dismissed sooner or later!"

Having said that, she looked around and then whispered to the female employee. "Felicia, let me tell you this. The manager told me to help her arrange for dinner tonight. She probably just wanted me to inform everyone about the dinner this evening!"

Felicia was not stupid. She exclaimed immediately. "So, she did not say that we are going to that hotel?"

"Well, she didn't say that she would treat us to the karaoke either but she was to be blamed for giving a vague instruction. I assume she told me to arrange for everything, including making the appointment at the hotel!"

Sonia gave an insouciant shrug and then smirked. "Huh, since you knew that she was kicked out of the Taylor family before, and some people even saw her picking up trash to sell, she must not have a lot of money. Perhaps she might have difficulties forking out one thousand dollars. The private room that I have made a booking for has a minimum spending of two hundred thousand dollars. I want her to make her a fool of herself in front of everyone."

Felicia gasped and yelped in surprise. “You, aren’t you taking it too far? That’s a lot of money. What will happen if she gets angry before we even start singing? Will you be in trouble? Besides, she might not turn up at all if she knew how expensive it is!”

“if she doesn’t turn up, she would be abashed. Dozens of colleagues are watching her. Moreover, I told everyone just now that she wanted to go to the best hotel. If we end up eating at some cheap roadside stalls, our colleagues will be disappointed. Do you think they will work hard for her in the future? Furthermore, she can’t put the blame on me. If she does, I will blame her instead for not giving clear instructions. All she said to me was to make the arrangements for me!”

Sonia smiled derisively. “If she embarrasses herself on the first day at work and makes the employees in the company unhappy and dissatisfied with her, there will be conflicts in the future. Also, I, the supervisor, do not cooperate well with her. In that case, she might have to vacate her position within a month!”

“Supervisor, don’t worry. I will be on your side! I will speak up for you!” After that, Felicia asked, “By the way, supervisor, I heard that this new manager is being paid a high salary!”

Chapter 102

“Very high? Isn’t it the same as the previous manager? Did she not get a monthly salary of one hundred thousand dollars? Added with various subsidies, she probably gets a total of one hundred and seventy thousand dollars, no?” Sonia frowned. She was slightly surprised.

“I heard that it’s not the same. If I am not mistaken, her salary is one million dollars a month with a year-end bonus!” The female employee called Felicia said, “I don’t know why she gets such a high salary. This is outrageous, don’t you think so? I can understand if she is a relative of the Drake family, but she is not! I think it is good enough for her to be appointed as the manager. There is no need to pay her such a high salary!”

Sonia was nervous just thinking about it. If she became the manager, would she be paid with such a high salary? She was a distant relative of the Drake family, after all. The thought of her being made the manager had Selena not joined the company circulated her mind. She was not able to stay calm the

entire afternoon. Soon, it was time to get off work. Selena, too, walked out of the office.

“Everyone, today is my first day at work in the company. In order to forge our friendship, I have planned to take everyone out for dinner tonight. Has supervisor Sonia notified everyone?” Selena asked cheerfully after walking out of the door.

There were not many employees, around twenty to thirty people. She estimated that it would cost her several thousand dollars at least. Although that was distressing for Selena, who had been in poverty for five years, she thought it was no big deal when she was reminded of her monthly income of a million dollars.

“Thank you, manager. You are so kind to us. I have never been to a six-star hotel in my life!”

A female employee who was extremely excited, said, “Unexpectedly, I have given my first time to the manager!”

“Alas! You have a kid already. How could this be your first time?” A male employee next to her joked.

“I meant the first time to a six-star hotel. What a dirty mind you have. Besides, the manager is not a man!”

The female employee grinned and said, “I am excited just thinking about going for a karaoke session at the high-end KTV after dinner!”

“Six-star hotel? High-end KTV?” Selena furrowed her brows upon hearing that. She told Sonya to inform everyone to leave work early instead of working overtime.

However, it seemed that Sonya had taken it upon herself to tell everyone about the extravagant night out.

“Yes, didn’t you let the supervisor inform everyone about it?”

An older employee with slightly grey hair frowned. “No?”

Sonia, who was by the side, smirked. She was eager to see how Selena wanted to do about it.

If she claimed that it was a mistake, everyone would be left disappointed and even feel that Selena pulled a trick on them. They would not cooperate well with her in the future at work. Besides, that would be her first impression for everyone. The first impression had always been important. Selena was not naive. She shot a side glance at Sonia and she knew what was going on. It seemed that someone was not very happy about her being the manager.

“Is the private room booked?” Selena asked the other party quizzically.

Chapter 103

“Yeah, didn’t you tell me to arrange for it? I have arranged for a relatively popular private room, the minimum spending is only two hundred thousand dollars!”

“I have heard that as the manager, your monthly salary is one million dollars. You should be fine with it, right?” Sonia said with a bright grin.

“No way! The manager’s salary is that high?”

“Oh dear, did you book a private room? The manager is really kind to us. The minimum spending is two hundred thousand dollars!”

The other employees were all enlivened, some female employees were jumping with excitement. Judging from the situation, Selena was overcome with a ghastly feeling which reflected on her face. Two

hundred thousand dollars as minimum spending. They would probably spend more than that for dinner. Besides, it was still uncertain how much they would be spending for the karaoke session.

She was furious and felt like giving an earful to Sonia. It was disgusting of that woman to have decided on Selena's behalf without consulting her. Unfortunately, she could not do so. She knew well that Sonia was an old-timer and also a supervisor. She might have a few confidantes around. Had Selena scolded Sonia, it would not bring any benefit to Selena at all.

If they were to go to an ordinary restaurant, everyone would be deeply disappointed and even start calling her stingy. Therefore, she could not say that Sonia made a mistake either. It would not set things right for her.

"What's wrong? Manager, didn't you ask me to arrange for it? Is there something wrong?"

Seeing that Selena had not said a word for a long time, Sonia was happy with herself.

Selena got herself together quickly and then smiled as if she was unperturbed. "The Dynasty Hotel, right? Let's go, it's still early. I'll give everyone two hours to go home and get changed or dress up. You can go back and get ready now!"

"Yeah! Great! Long live the manager!" The female employee that had the most exciting reaction before, shouted immediately.

"The manager is so generous. She is taking us to a six-star hotel for dinner. I have not met a leader like this in my life!"

"Yes, it's the first time I have encountered such a good leader!"

The employees left for their homes one by one in excitement. They all agreed to gather at the hotel entrance.

Sonia, who stood by the side was completely stunned. She had never expected Selena to agree to it. The woman had not been working for five years, someone even saw her picking up trash before. They would probably need three to four hundred thousand dollars for the entertainment tonight. Can she afford that much money?

“What’s wrong? Supervisor, don’t you want to go back and put on makeup or something?”

Selena saw that Sonia was still standing there. She could not help but jeered in her heart and asked.

“Oh, I...I will go now!” Sonia replied and then left with the others.

“Supervisor, what’s up? This woman actually agreed! Does she have that much money?”

As soon as Sonia walked out of the company, Felicia stepped forward eagerly to gossip.

“I’m also surprised. Does she have so much money? Even if her monthly salary is one million dollars, she hasn’t been paid, has she? Where the hell does she get so much money from?”

Sonia knitted her brows together. “This woman is cunning. She must have known that I deliberately did that to embarrass her, so she didn’t want to give in. She played along to win the hearts of the people.”

“Yeah, if she had said that she did not ask you to book a six-star hotel, or told you to find a new place for dinner, the other employees would definitely be unhappy. She is very smart to have agreed to it as if nothing happened. She is not easy to deal with!”

Chapter 104

Selena plodded out of the company after the others had left, a sour expression on her face all the while. She only had 100,000 dollars with her, but the dinner and karaoke could easily cost her over 300,000.

She felt the pinch on her. However, Selena had no other choice. Had she allowed Sonia to succeed, she would have a miserable time at the company in the future. Besides, even if it cost a lot of money, she was paid quite a hefty salary. As long as she drew her first salary, she would be lifted from the tight financial situation. She could not think of a better solution after mulling over the thought for a while, so she decided to call Fiona.

Jack had taken out a million dollars before, after all, and there were roughly 800,000 with Fiona. She could only take some of it from Fiona first to settle the matter.

“Ma...” Selena called out softly once Fiona answered the call.

“Selena, how are you at work?” Fiona asked anxiously without waiting for Selena to talk more. “Selena, let me tell you that we have decided that it is best if you divorce Jack. The sooner the better. Perhaps you should take some time off tomorrow or the day after tomorrow to finalize the divorce papers. Otherwise, this hothead guy would cause us a lot of trouble...”

Selena was speechless for a while. “Ma, don’t tell me this. I won’t divorce him. Even if he can’t fork out 30 million on Grandpa’s 70th birthday or offer us any gift, I’ll still stay with him!”

“You... Why are you so disobedient? We had become like this today because you didn’t listen to your grandpa and us. If you had aborted the child, we wouldn’t have ended up like this. Why did I give birth to such an unfilial daughter? What a miserable life...” Fiona grumbled continuously on the other end of the phone.

...

Selena was at a loss of words. As she did not want to dwell on the matter any longer, she decided to be straightforward. “I called you because there’s an emergency, Ma, and I need money. Can you transfer 300,000 to me now?”

“300,000?” As soon as money was mentioned, Fiona’s voice instantly rose by several octaves. “Why do

you need so much money?" she sputtered. "Aren't you working there to make money? What's the money for? Don't tell me that silly Jack hit someone's luxury car with his electric scooter!"

Selena was speechless again; she was dumbfounded at her mother's ridiculous imagination. "Ma, what nonsense are you talking about here?" she spoke, a bitter smile on her face. "Just transfer me the money. I need it really fast. It's my first day at work and I'm appointed as the manager, so I'm taking the staff in my department out for a meal!"

"Why do you need that much just for a meal? How many people are there in your department? Why do you need that much money? Don't you have 100,000 at hand? Isn't that enough?"

"You must be hiding something from me, right? Jack must be in trouble again. Did someone ask him to pay up? Tell your mother honestly. What's going on..." Fiona kept rambling on the other end of the line.

Selena was so angry that she curtly replied, "Ma, can you just transfer it to me now? I'll pay you back once I get paid. I'll give you 100,000 more, alright? Just think of it like I'm borrowing it from you, okay?"

"But how do I transfer it? Jack gave me cash, and I haven't deposited it in the bank yet. Besides, if you don't tell me exactly what you're going to do with it, I won't give it to you!"

Chapter 105

Fiona was stubborn. The corners of Selena's mouth curled into a bitter smile. She bitterly hung up in disappointment.

"Hey, Honey. What's the matter? You look like you're in a very bad mood on your first day at work!" Coincidentally, Jack parked his electric scooter in front of her. He took out the ice cream he bought and gave it to Selena. "The weather is quite hot. It's still early, so I just drove there and bought two ice creams!"

Selena responded to Jack's gentle smile with a sad one. She took the ice cream and lamented, "Jack, I don't know what to do. I'd just gotten into the company, and I fell for someone's scheme. What

disappointed me was that when I asked my mother for 300,000 and told her that I'd pay her back when I get her salary, she refused to lend it to me. She thought that you were in trouble and I wanted the money to pay up to someone for the trouble you caused."

Jack felt distressed just by seeing Selena's dull expression. He stepped forward and smiled faintly. "Honey, it's okay. If you need money, just tell your husband. You need 300,000, right? I'll take you to the bank and cash out one million. I'll let you have it so you can feel at ease!"

The moment he finished, however, his face went somber. His fists balled tightly. "Who dares to plot against you on your first day at work? I'll kill him! Motherf*cker... How dare he schemed against my woman? He's digging his own grave!"

"Can you not do this? Do you want to solve every problem with your fists? And, actually, it's not a big deal. She's been a supervisor for many years, and perhaps she was eager to be promoted as a manager. Unfortunately, the vacancy was given to me."

Again, Selena smiled bitterly. She had mixed feelings for Jack. She was mad at him for behaving like a brash man who wanted to solve everything with his fists. He even threatened to kill the person. What she loved about the guy, on the other hand, was his sincere care and love for her. She never lacked a sense of security.

"In that case, I won't do anything with my fists. You said that you're short of 300,000. What's going on?" Jack asked.

"I was careless. Sonia, the supervisor of our company, has been in the company's purchasing department for many years... Unexpectedly, she made a booking for a six-star hotel and karaoke after dinner. I thought that I should prepare at least 400,000 dollars. I have 100,000 on hand, so I asked my mother to give me 300,000 dollars. Who would've thought..."

Selena confessed the details that happened between her and her mother to Jack. "Hey, if I had only known, I wouldn't have agreed to treat them just now," she continued. "It's a big deal if I'm embarrassed or they made it hard for me in the office in the future. Now, we can't fork out that much money, and I told them to meet me at the hotel's entrance, too. This is even more embarrassing."

“Well, there’s still karaoke after dinner,” Jack replied. “I’m afraid one million dollars might not be enough. Since you’ve agreed to treat them and told those employees to go home and dress up, let’s prepare two million for tonight. That Sonia is a motherf*cker. I think she wants to see you embarrassed about not having enough money.”

After much consideration, Jack was determined. “Let’s go and cash out two million. We’ll show them what’s money.”

“Two... Two million? Do you still have that much money on your card?” Selena gasped after hearing Jack. She thought he had emptied out his bonus last time. She did not expect him to have so much money on his card.

“Honey, get on the scooter. Let’s go get some money. Hold on tight to me!”

Jack patted the seat of his electric scooter and smiled warmly.

“Alright!” Selena’s face flushed. She licked the ice cream she was holding by hand, and her heart was filled with sweetness and joy.No. 1 Supreme Warrior

Chapter 106-110

Chapter 106

Selena’s mouth curled up into a smile as she sat on Jack’s electric scooter. She had waited for five years for him to come back. He was the first to appear before her when she was going through the most difficult, helpless time of her life. With the sweet thoughts dancing in her mind, she held the ice cream with one hand and her free arm wrapped around Jack’s waist deliberately.

Her blush seared through her cheeks. To hide that she was doing that deliberately, she coquettishly spoke, “Drive slowly. You’re scaring me!”

Jack peeped down at her jade-like white hand; he felt a sense of happiness. He thought they were moving very slow already.

Soon, the two arrived at a bank's entrance. Jack then parked his scooter on the road shoulder.

"Let's go there and buy a big duffel bag. Two million in cash is a lot. If you don't buy a big bag, I'm afraid you can't hold it all!"

Jack smiled and crossed the road together with Selena.

"You... Are you really able to withdraw two million in cash?" Selena looked uneasy; she was not convinced. It seemed as though Jack might have contributed more than once in the army. Otherwise, it would be impossible for him to be given three or four million as his bonus.

"If I weren't so afraid of attracting too much to mention, I can take out a million for you!" He grinned cheekily at Selena.

"A million? You must be joking!" Selena was not sure whether she should cry or laugh at his joke. This guy had gotten better and better in bragging.

"Boss, I want to buy a bag!" Jack called out as they entered a small grocery store next to the bank.

"Oh yeah, I want a big one!" The owner of the grocery store was a middle-aged woman. After she studied both Jack and Selena, she stated, "You're buying it to keep clothes, aren't you? Are you planning to go to work? If you don't have many clothes, this should be enough."

Jack frowned at the bag. "I have no idea how much is two million in cash," he spoke. "I don't think this is enough, so let's just get a larger one!"

“Young man, do you need to brag when you buy this kind of bag? Young people nowadays are really humorous!”

The middle-aged woman chuckled and turned to Selena. “Young lady, I want to tell you that a young man like him who likes to brag isn’t very reliable. You have to think carefully. Getting married is a big decision to make!”

Jack’s face turned dark. Why did he think the woman was a little too nosy for her own good?

Selena could not hold her laughter after she heard that. “Sister, it’s too late. Our kid is already running around. Otherwise, I’d consider choosing a better husband!”

Jack smirked when he heard the conversation. “Oh, I see. You sure you want to choose? Believe it or not, I’ll spank you when we get home!”

“Move along. Take this and go put some money in it. I’m older than you, but I’ve yet to get married. You said your kid is already running around, too. What have I done to deserve this humiliation in broad daylight?” The middle-aged woman seemed to be slightly over her thirties. She gave a large bag with floral patterns that workers often use to Jack. “Take this for your cash. I think this must be big enough!”

“How much is it? Forget it, I’ll give you a hundred. Keep the change to comfort your wounded heart!” Jack thought that the woman was funny, so he threw a hundred in cash to her before turning around with Selena and left the store.

“You’re really generous!” Selena did not know how to react. “I used to take Kylie out to pick up some trash. We couldn’t even make a hundred a day!”

Chapter 107

Hearing that, Jack’s heart quivered. He stopped at the bank’s entrance and reached out to caress Selena’s pretty face. “Don’t worry. I’m back now, and you’ll never suffer anymore. Anyway, your husband is now someone with social status. I’m also earning 20 million dollars a month now, right?”

Selena's heart was filled with warmth, and a warm smile graced her lips. "It seems that Miss Tanya didn't lie to you. You really got the job!"

"Yes. They had also arranged a room in the villa for me. I can live there if I want to, but I think it's more comfortable to sleep in a room with my wife!" Jack smiled as he studied the woman before him. Through her, he realized that the world was so beautiful.

He would be responsible for her life from then on!

"What are you doing here with a big flowery bag? Are you going in there to pick up the mineral water bottle? Get out of the way!"

A man who was wearing a gold necklace came over. After that, his eyes traveled down the fair legs under Selena's professional work skirt. He exclaimed lecherously. "Tsk, tsk! This woman is pretty good-looking. How come a trash-picker can find such a beautiful wife?"

Jack gave the guy a cold stare and took Selena straight to the bank.

The man also walked into the bank with a wide smile.

Inside, there were already people standing in lines. Many were sitting on chairs, waiting for their turn.

"There are too many people here. I don't know how long it'll take to withdraw the money!" Selena sighed helplessly at the sight of the big crowd.

"It'll be fast!" Jack reassured her.

A female employee at the counter saw Jack coming. She went up to him with a huge grin and enthusiastically ushered, "Oh, Mr. White, you're here again? Come, come, let's go into the VIP room. You and your girlfriend can take a rest there. I'll be serving you immediately!"

"Wait, he's just a trash picker. Why are you serving someone like him? What's going on in your bank? You should be serving me instead. I'm here to take out a hundred thousand!" The fat guy wearing the gold necklace patted his beer belly and rose his chin slightly, looking all arrogant.

"I'm the manager here. Even if you're a VIP, it isn't my responsibility as a manager to serve you!" The woman's face turned cold. "This brother is our VIP customer; a super VIP who withdrew a million the last time he was here!"

"You weren't that friendly when I came here the other day," Jack calmly interjected.

"Hey, it was a misunderstanding. I didn't expect you to be so rich. Do you really want to withdraw 1 million?"

The female manager was flattered. "Dear customer, how much are you taking out this time?" she asked Jack respectfully.

Jack looked at the bag he was holding. "This bag should be able to hold 2 million in cash, right? I'll withdraw 2 million dollars!"

The man next to him was dumbfounded. Someone that could take out 2 million in cash must be a rich second generation.

"Oh, but of course. Please come this way!" The female manager led the way.

"By the way, I have to correct you. This isn't my girlfriend; she's my wife!" Jack was surprised at the treatment he received. Then, he introduced Selena to the manager.

Chapter 108

“Wife?”

The manager was considered a beautiful woman with an attractive figure. To have heard Jack’s clarification, she was stunned momentarily. She eyed Selena, green with envy. “This young lady is really lucky to have married such a handsome and rich man. You have nothing to worry about for the rest of your life!”

She had hoped for a chance to have a relationship with Jack. After all, it was the first time she met such a wealthy man.

The instant she met Selena, however, she felt inferior on the spot. The woman who stood before her was much better than her, appearance and temperance-wise.

Once she led Jack and Selena into a private room, the manager went to make a cup of coffee for them both before helping them with their business.

After a while, a large amount of cash was sent to Jack under the escort of two security guards.

“Help me put them in this bag!” Jack said with a faint smile.

The two security guards were flabbergasted at the sight of the flowery bag. Such an ordinary flowery bag many wage earners used was given to them to stash away the two million cash. Indeed, rich people were one-of-a-kind and hard to understand.

“You really took two million out!”

Selena tried lifting the flowery bag in front of her. It felt quite heavy.

After the couple went out, they quickly hopped on the scooter and rode away to the hotel.

“Are there really two million dollars in there?”

Looking at the seemingly heavy bag on the electric scooter, the woman who sold the bag to them opened her mouth wide in surprise. She wondered if what she saw was correct.

She had seen the couple going into the bank next door with the empty bag, but when they appeared again, the bag was full and heavy.

She ran to one of the security guards and asked, “Brother, were the two people who walked out just now carrying money in the bag?”

The security guard rolled his eyes. “Are you talking nonsense? If they’re not here to withdraw money, do you think they’re here to collect trash?”

“My goodness. It’s unbelievable! I can’t imagine a man who dressed so casually on his electric scooter is so rich!”

The woman swallowed a big gulp of saliva. She began to doubt her judgment.

Since it was still early, Jack took Selena somewhere for a drink. They spent some time together, chatting, before heading toward the hotel.

At the plaza outside the hotel, more than 20 employees of the procurement department stood waiting.

All the female employees put effort into dressing up as it was their first time patronizing such a high-end

place. They were very excited; some were sexy, and some were dressed as though they were going to a ballroom party.

“Why hasn’t the manager arrived? I’m famished!” A female employee mumbled after waiting for a while.

Felicia checked the time. She frowned and went up to Sonia. “Supervisor, how come Selena isn’t here yet? Maybe she’s not coming because she has no money?”

Sonia was taken aback after hearing Felicia, but she was pleased. “Oh, well. I’ve booked this hotel to embarrass her. She must be terribly upset and has decided to stand us up!”

“Hey, if this is the case, it’d be good for us!”

Felicia laughed. “Everyone put effort into dressing up for dinner. They’d be pissed if they find out Selena stood us up.”

“Pfft! I thought she was so smart and rich. It turned out that she was just pulling our legs. Stupid woman!”

“I’d love to see how she handles work in the future!”

Sonya snorted coldly as her eyes gleamed with triumph.

All of a sudden, a male employee spoke aloud: “Oh, she’s here. The manager’s here!”

Chapter 109

“Where?”

“Which car is hers?” someone asked. “Why can’t I see it?”

“The person behind the electric scooter looks like the manager!”

The male employee pointed to the electric scooter slowly approaching the road shoulder.

“My goodness, it’s her! Who’s that man? Surely not her husband, right? There’s a flowery bag in front of her. Is her husband on his way to work and he dropped her off on his way?”

Felicia was surprised at what she saw. “Could it be? Didn’t you say that the manager’s salary is one million a month? With such a high salary, why does her husband need to work?”

A male employee frowned at her remark.

“You may not know but she’s the famous beauty, Selena Taylor. She was the one kicked out by the Taylor Family,” she added. “Her husband must’ve returned from the army!”

“Let me tell you something. Do you know why she rides an electric scooter? It’s because she has no money. Some time ago, someone saw her with her daughter picking up trash to sell. Who knows how she landed this million-dollars-a-month job. Besides, isn’t it at least one month away before she is paid the salary?” Felicia jeered and spilled out what she knew to the other employees.

“It’s impossible that she has no money. If she has no money, why would the manager invite us to a six-star hotel?”

The male employee concluded after thinking for a while. “I believe the manager must be rich.”

“If she’s rich, why doesn’t she buy a car? Why is she riding an electric scooter?” Felicia was still not convinced.

“Hey, what are you talking about? Anyway, it’s the manager’s treat today. It’s her business if she has money to pay or not. We just need to enjoy the night!” Sonia, who was standing aside, quipped.

After Jack and Selena found a place to park their scooter, they walked over together.

“Let me introduce everyone. He’s my husband, Jack! He just got off work, so he came to pick me up!”

Selena joined the crowd, smiling happily. “I’m really sorry to have kept everyone waiting!”

“Don’t worry, Manager. We just arrived not long ago!” a female employee replied cheerfully.

Sonia smiled at Jack. “This is the manager’s husband. I heard that he used to be a food delivery guy, right? It was only then he was enlisted on behalf of Young Master Taylor, right?”

Selena’s face darkened, but she managed to force a polite smile. “Wow, Supervisor, you do know a lot of things!”

“Heh, I do know a lot of things. I’ve also heard that our manager used to pick up trash a few days ago. How come you have suddenly become our manager? What an incredible change!” Sonia mocked. “You two are such a good match!”

“Manager, she meant it the derogatory way, not the other way around!” Felicia stepped forward and reminded Selena.

“Is it really? Oh, I’m such a fool. I thought it was a nice way to praise people. I’ve made a fool out of myself for not learning enough!” Sonia said with a smile.

“Pretty girl, did you brush your teeth today?” Jack rebutted coldly.

“Sure I did. Why?”

“Then why is your mouth so smelly?”

Chapter 110

“You... Why did you say that to me? What’s the matter with you? How low of you to do that!” Sonia was so angry that her chest was heaving. She did not expect a comeback from Jack.

She was a distant relative of the Drake Family. Everyone in the company knew that. That was the reason why no one in the company dared to offend her. Even the previous manager had to give her face and asked her opinions for many decisions. In her opinion, Jack was just a lousy soldier, so he was not qualified to talk to her like that.

“Oh, sorry, I’m just like you. I didn’t study much, and I’m just a boorish man. I thought I was praising you!” Jack gave an insouciant shrug as he defended himself.

Many employees chuckled when they heard their exchange. That guy was smart and witty with his words.

“You...” Sonia was so angry that her face turned blue, yet she was at a loss of words to retaliate. She could only cross her arms across her chest and glanced at the bag in Jack’s hand. “Why do you bring such an ugly bag if you’re here to eat? This is a six-star hotel, the best hotel in Eastfield. Don’t you feel ashamed to go in like this?”

Jack looked down at the bag in his hand. “If it’s embarrassing to carry such a large sack of cash, wouldn’t it be even more embarrassing if you walk in empty-handed?”

“My goodness. Is this for real? Is it all cash in there?” A male employee was wide-eyed upon hearing Jack.

Everyone gasped. If it was cash in the bag, would it be a few million worth of cash in the bag? What a haughty look! That was an act of a tycoon.

“He was right. It’s all money in here!” Sonia mocked. “If I’m not wrong, it’s the money from gathering trash you two had done before. Do you plan to go sell it after dinner? If that’s the case, I’m convinced that it’s money. Maybe ten or twenty dollars worth?”

Sonia paused before turning to Selena. “Manager, your husband is really good at cracking jokes!” she contemptuously added.

Selena wore a smug look. “Supervisor, I’m sorry to disappoint you, but there’s real money in my husband’s bag,” she retorted. “We had nothing to carry the cash with, so we bought a bag. We’ll use the leftover money to play a game with everyone later!”

“No way. Your husband is a soldier! How can he be rich?” Sonia said dubiously. She studied the bag carefully and tried to trace the outline of the contents. The outline looked neat and did not resemble bottles or cans.

“A soldier can’t have money? You’ve got long hair, but you’re surely short of knowledge!” Jack smiled as he glanced around at the crowd. “Let’s go in first. Which private room did you book? Have you ordered the dishes?”

“The private room isn’t expensive; the minimum spending is only 200,000. Mr. White, do you think it’s appropriate?” Sonia deliberately increased her tone when she mentioned the price range. She had her apricot eyes locked on Jack’s face, not wanting to miss his expression.

To her disappointment, Jack was unruffled. “It’s okay! Let’s go!” Jack slung the bag over his shoulder and

led the way into the hotel.

“Let’s go!”

Selena thought it was funny how Jack walked. He looked like a farmworker who was on his way to work. Unexpectedly, just as Jack was about to step into the hotel, two security officers came right up to him.